

A COMBINED HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS

by

ORVILLE E. DANIEL, PH. D.



BAPTIST BOOK ROOM

COCANADA, INDIA.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

Printed at
S. R. P. PRESS, COCANADA, INDIA.

1937

DEDICATED TO

E.M.D. and M.L.D.,

two fair members of the rising generation, with the prayer that their early interest in the life of Jesus may blossom into earnest and active devotion.

PREFACE

Harmonies of the Gospels, so called, which have appeared in print hitherto, have presented the Gospels paralleled, but not really harmonized. Strictly speaking, therefore, the use of the term "Harmony" with reference to them is inaccurate, as Stevens and Burton have observed in the preface of their well-known edition.

This book is an attempt not merely to parallel but actually to harmonize the Gospels, by drawing out from the paralleled narratives a complete connected account of the life of Christ, free from repetition and yet comprising every detail given to us by the inspired writers. For this purpose two sizes of type have been used, and **the complete connected story is obtained by simply following the bold face type back and forth from column to column down the page.**

At the same time, the use of two styles of type enables the reader to see at a glance which of the Gospels presents most fully the successive details of the sacred history. In the few instances where two or more Gospels present parallel material differing not merely in quantity but in substance, this fact has been pointed out; and explanations have been suggested in foot-notes for some of the seeming contradictions.

Care has also been taken in this Harmony so that the important benefits to be derived from the special arrangement of material may be obtained with a minimum of conscious effort on the part of the reader; thus one's mind is left free to concentrate upon the chronological development of the engrossing story itself. For example, even when a section of the story is presented by only one Gospel, the section is begun in single column, so that one may be instantly cognizant of which Gospel is being read. Again, parallel passages have been placed in exact juxtaposition, insofar as that is possible, to facilitate comparison. Furthermore, the Logia sections have been specially indicated by the use of double columns. It is the author's humble desire that this book may enjoy a place of wide usefulness, not only in theological seminaries, but also among lay students and teachers of the matchless life of Christ.

PREFACE

It would be impossible to mention the names of all those to whom I have been indebted in the preparation of this Harmony. I have made full use of the invaluable work done by many New Testament scholars. Special mention, however, should be made of the late Dr. A. T. Robertson, one of my revered teachers, whose Harmony has interested and helped me most. I am grateful also to Rev. L. E. Wilton, my fellow-missionary, who has undertaken the task of putting this Harmony into the Telugu language, for helpful suggestions especially in connection with the wording of section headings; and to my wife, who has devoted much time and care to the preparation of the table of contents, etc., and to the correction of all the proofs. My sincere thanks are also due to The International Council of Religious Education, by whose kind permission I have used the American Standard Edition of the Gospels.

Vizianagram, S. India,
July, 1937.

ORVILLE E. DANIEL.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface	Page vii
Table for Finding any Passage in the Harmony	xxi
The Parables of Jesus	xxviii
The Harmony of the Gospels :	

PART I

Section INTRODUCTION

1. The Dedication of Luke's Gospel	I
2. The Pre-incarnate Existence of Christ	2
3. The Genealogy of Jesus	2

PART II

THE BIRTH AND FIRST THIRTY YEARS OF JOHN THE BAPTIST AND OF JESUS

4. The Annunciation to Zacharias of the Birth of John the Baptist	5
5. The Annunciation to Mary of the Birth of Jesus	7
6. Mary's Visit to Elisabeth	8
7. The Birth of John the Baptist	9
8. The Annunciation to Joseph of the Birth of Jesus	10
9. The Birth of Jesus	11
10. The Angels and the Shepherds	12
11. The Circumcision and Naming of Jesus	13
12. The Presentation of Jesus in the Temple	14
13. The Visit of the Wise Men	15
14. The Flight into Egypt and the Slaughter of the Bethlehem Children	16

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section	Page
15. The Return from Egypt to Nazareth	17
16. The Childhood of John the Baptist in Judæa	18
17. The Childhood of Jesus at Nazareth	18
18. The Visit of Jesus to the Passover Feast at Jerusalem when Twelve Years of Age	18
19. Jesus from Youth to Manhood at Nazareth	19
20. John the Baptist's Private Life in the Desert	20

PART III

THE PREPARATORY MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

21. The First Public Appearance of John the Baptist	21
22. A Specimen of John's Preaching	25
23. The Announcement of the Coming Messiah	26

PART IV

THE FIRST PUBLIC APPEARANCE OF THE MESSIAH

24. The Baptism of Jesus	28
25. The Temptation of Jesus	30
26. John's Testimony to the Committee of the Sanhedrin	32
27. John's Introduction of Jesus as the Messiah, and Christ's First Contact with Some of the Twelve	33

PART V

THE BEGINNING OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY

28. Jesus Works His First Miracle	36
-----------------------------------	----

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section	Page
29. The First Sojourn at Capernaum	37
30. The First Cleansing of the Temple	37
31. Shallow Belief at Jerusalem	38
32. The Interview of Nicodemus with Jesus	39
33. The Parallel Ministry of Jesus in Judæa and of John the Baptist in Samaria — John's Loyalty to Jesus	40
34. The Imprisonment of John the Baptist	41
35. Christ's Reasons for Leaving Judæa	43
36. Jesus and the Samaritan Woman at the Well	44

PART VI

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

37. Christ's Arrival and Reception in Galilee — A Brief Summary of His Teaching	46
38. The Healing at Cana of the Capernaum Nobleman's Son	47
39. The First Rejection at Nazareth	48
40. The New Home in Capernaum	49
41. The Great Catch of Fishes and the Call of the Four Fishermen	50
42. A Busy Sabbath — The Healing of a Demoniac, Peter's Mother-in-law and Many Others	52
43. The First Tour of Galilee with the Four Fishermen	56
44. Healing a Leper	58
45. Healing the Paralytic Lowered through the Roof	60
46. The Call of Matthew Levi	64
47. At Matthew's Feast Jesus Defends His Eating with Publicans and Sinners and Explains His Disciples' Neglect of Fasting	65
48. Healing the Man at the Pool of Bethesda — A Sabbath Controversy	69
49. The Disciples Plucking Grain — Another Sabbath Controversy	71

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section	Page
50. Healing the Man with the Withered Hand — Another Sabbath Controversy	74
51. Jesus Heals Great Multitudes by the Sea of Galilee	76
52. Jesus Selects the Twelve Apostles	78
53. The Sermon on the Mount	80
54. Healing the Centurion's Servant	90
55. Raising the Widow's Son	92
56. The Inquiry from John the Baptist in Prison and the Reply of Jesus	93
57. A Sinful Woman Anoints Christ's Feet — The Parable of the Two Debtors	96
58. The Second Tour of Galilee, with the Twelve and Some Women	97
59. The Death of John the Baptist	98
60. The Healing of a Blind and Dumb Demoniac Occasions Another Controversy with the Scribes and Pharisees — Christ's Mother and Brethren Seek to Take Him Home	100
61. The First Great Group of Parables	106
62. Stilling the Storm	119
63. Healing the Gerasene Demoniac	121
64. Returning, Jesus Heals the Woman who Touched His Garment and Raises Jairus' Daughter	128
65. Jesus Heals Two Blind Men and a Dumb Demoniac	136
66. The Final Rejection at Nazareth	136
67. The Third Tour of Galilee — Jesus Instructs the Twelve and Sends Them Forth by Twos	138
68. Hearing about Jesus, Herod Antipas Fears that He is John the Baptist Risen from the Dead	143
69. The Return of the Twelve	145

PART VII

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

A. THE FIRST RETIREMENT ACROSS THE LAKE

70. Feeding the Five Thousand	146
-------------------------------	-----

Section	Page
71. Jesus Rejects Political Kingship	152
72. Jesus Walks on the Water	153
73. Crowds Healed at Gennesaret	156
74. The Discourse on the Bread of Life	157
75. Another Controversy with the Pharisees because the Disciples Eat with Unwashed Hands	160
B. THE SECOND RETIREMENT NORTH-WESTWARD TO THE REGION OF TYRE AND SIDON AND EASTWARD TO DECAPOLIS	
76. Healing the Syrophenician Woman's Daughter	166
77. Healing the Deaf Man with the Impediment in his Speech and Many Others in Decapolis	169
78. Feeding the Four Thousand	170
79. A Brief Visit Across the Lake — The Pharisees and Sadducees Ask for a Sign	172
C. THE THIRD RETIREMENT TO BETHSAIDA JULIAS AND CÆSAREA PHILIPPI	
80. Again Crossing the Lake, Jesus Warns the Disciples Against the Leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees and Chides Them for their Dullness	174
81. Jesus Heals a Blind Man at Bethsaida Julias	176
82. Near Cæsarea Philippi Jesus Tests the Twelve — Peter's Confession	177
83. Jesus Foretells His Death and Resurrection and the Coming of His Kingdom	179
84. The Transfiguration of Jesus	182
85. The Perplexity of the Three Disciples about Christ's Reference to His Resurrection and about the Prophecy Concerning Elijah	185
86. Healing the Demoniac Boy	187
87. Returning into Galilee, Jesus Again Foretells His Death and Resurrection	192
88. Jesus Pays the Temple Tax with a Shekel from a Fish's Mouth	194

Section	Page
89. Jesus Rejects the Advice of His Unbelieving Brothers to Appear at Once in Judæa	194
90. Jesus Rebukes the Selfish Ambition and Narrowness of the Disciples with a Discourse on the Necessity for Childlikeness, Tolerance and Forgiveness	195
91. While Going Privately through Samaria to the Feast of Tabernacles at Jerusalem, Jesus Rebukes the Mistaken Zeal of James and John	201
92. In Reply to the Excuses of Three Would-be Followers, Jesus Demands Complete Renunciation	202

PART VIII

THE LATER JUDEAN MINISTRY

93. At the Feast of Tabernacles Jesus Asserts His Messiahship in a Great Discourse	204
94. The Adulteress Brought to Jesus	206
95. By Claiming to be the Light of the World, Jesus Angers the Pharisees — When He Exposes their Sinfulness, they Attempt to Stone Him	207
96. The Man Born Blind, Healed on The Sabbath, Confounds and Angers the Pharisees — Jesus Answers them with the Allegory of the Good Shepherd	210
97. Jesus Instructs the Seventy and Sends Them out by Twos — On their Return He Rejoices in their Work	213
98. Jesus Answers a Lawyer's Questions — The Parable of the Good Samaritan	215
99. Jesus at the Home of Martha and Mary	216
100. A Discourse to the Disciples on Prayer — The Parable of the Importunate Friend	216
101. The Healing of a Dumb Demoniac Leads to Another Clash with the Pharisees	217
102. Jesus Causes Astonishment by Dining Unbathed in a Phar-	

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section		Page
	risee's House — He Again Exposes their Ceremonial Hypocrisy	219
103.	Parables on the Folly of Worldliness and the Need for Spiritual Alertness	221
104.	Jesus Uses Two Current Calamities to Illustrate the Imperativeness of Repentance — The Parable of the Barren Fig Tree	224
105.	Jesus Heals a Crippled Woman on the Sabbath and Defends Himself Against the Ruler of the Synagogue	224
106.	At the Feast of Dedication Jesus Again Confronts the Hostile Jews on the Question of His Messiahship	225

PART IX

THE PEREAN MINISTRY

A. THE FIRST WITHDRAWAL FROM JUDEA TO PEREA

107.	Jesus Sojourns Beyond the Jordan	227
108.	A Preaching Tour Through Peræa — Jesus Moves again in the Direction of Jerusalem	228
109.	Jesus Answers by a Parable the Question Whether Few shall be Saved	228
110.	Warned by the Pharisees Against Herod, Jesus Expresses Indifference, Irony and Grief	229
111.	While Dining with a Chief Pharisee on the Sabbath, Jesus Heals a Man with the Dropsy and Silences His Adversaries — Advice and Warning Suggested by the Occasion	230
112.	Three Parables to the Multitudes on the Demands of True Discipleship	231
113.	Criticized for Receiving Sinners, Jesus Narrates the Parables of the Lost Sheep, the Lost Coin and the Lost Son	232
114.	Two Parables on the Use of Money — The Wily Steward, and the Rich Man and Lazarus	234

Section	Page
115. Jesus Speaks to the Disciples Concerning Forgiveness, Faith and Service	236
116. Returning into Judæa to Bethany, Jesus Raises Lazarus from the Dead	237
117. The Raising of Lazarus Causes Popular Belief, Pharisaic Plots and the Consequent Departure of Jesus to Ephraim in Northern Judæa	240
B. THE SECOND WITHDRAWAL FROM JUDEA TO PEREA BY WAY OF SAMARIA AND GALILEE	
118. Healing the Ten Lepers	241
119. Christ's Reply to a Question about the Coming of the Kingdom	242
120. Two Parables on Prayer — The Importunate Widow, and the Pharisee and the Publican	243
121. Going from Galilee into Peræa, Jesus Teaches and Heals Great Multitudes	244
122. In Reply to a Question of the Pharisees, Jesus Teaches Concerning Divorce	244
123. Jesus Blesses the Little Children	247
124. The Rich Young Ruler — A Discourse to the Disciples on the Perils of Riches and the Rewards of Service	248
125. Jesus Again Foretells His Approaching Death and Resurrection Privately to the Disciples	254
126. Jesus Reproves the Selfish Ambition of James and John and their Mother	257
127. The Healing of Blind Bartimæus	260
128. Jesus Visits Zacchæus	263
129. As He Approaches Jerusalem, Jesus Endeavors to Correct Popular Misunderstanding about the Coming of the Kingdom — The Parable of the Pounds	263
130. The Hostile Proclamation of the Sanhedrin Creates Popular Suspense in Jerusalem Concerning the Coming of Jesus to the Passover	265

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section	Page
131. The Arrival of Jesus at Bethany Causes Popular Interest and Priestly Plots	265

PART X

THE PASSION WEEK

A. THE LAST PUBLIC MINISTRY IN JERUSALEM AND THE FINAL CLASH WITH THE JEWISH LEADERS

132. The Triumphal Entry of Jesus into Jerusalem as the Messiah	266
133. Jesus Curses the Barren Fig Tree	273
134. The Second Cleansing of the Temple	274
135. The Desire of Some Greeks to see Jesus Occasions a Great Discourse on the Significance of His Approaching Death	276
136. The Barren Fig Tree Found Withered	279
137. Challenged by the Sanhedrin as to His Authority, Jesus Replies with a Shrewd Question and Pertinent Parables	281
138. The Pharisees and Herodians Try in Vain to Ensnare Jesus with a Question about Paying Tribute to Cæsar	289
139. Jesus Replies to a Subtle Question from the Sadducees about the Resurrection	292
140. Jesus Answers the Question of a Pharisaic Lawyer Concerning the Greatest Commandment	295
141. Jesus Finally Silences the Pharisees with the Question of the Messiah's Relationship to David	298
142. Jesus Publicly Denounces the Scribes and Pharisees	299
143. A Widow's Two Mites	303

B. JESUS WITH THE TWELVE IN THE SHADOW OF THE CROSS

144. A Great Discourse to the Disciples about the Destruction of Jerusalem and the End of the World	304
---	-----

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Section	Page
180. Returning to Jerusalem to Report to the Disciples, Cleopas and his Companion are Informed that Christ has Appeared to Peter	407
181. Jesus Appears to the Disciples, While Thomas is Absent, and Gives Them a Commission — They Fail to Convince Thomas	408
182. Jesus Appears to the Disciples Again a Week Later, and Thomas is Convinced	410
183. Jesus Appears to Seven of the Disciples at the Sea of Galilee — The Miraculous Catch of Fishes and Peter's Test	411
184. Jesus Appears to the Eleven Disciples on an Appointed Mountain in Galilee — The Great Commission	412
185. The Ascension of Jesus	414

PART XII

CONCLUSION

186. The Purpose of John's Gospel, and the Personal Testimony of the Author	417
---	-----

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

MATTHEW

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
1	1-17	2-3	9	35-38	138
	18-25 ^a	10-11	10	1	139
	25 ^b	13		2-4	78-79
2	1-12	15-16		5-42	139-142
	13-18	16	11	1	142
	19-23	17		2-30	93-96
3	1-6	22-24	12	1-8	71-73
	7-10	25		9-15 ^a	74-76
	11-12	26-27		15 ^b -21	76-77
	13-17	28-30		22-50	101-106
4	1-11	30-32	13	1-53	106-118
	12	43		54-58	136-138
	13-16	49-50	14	1-2	143-144
	17	47		3-5	41-42
	18-22	50-52		6-13 ^a	98-100
	23-25	57-58		13 ^b -21	146-152
5	1-48	80-84		22-23	152-153
6	1-34	85-86		24-33	154-156
7	1-29	86-90		34-36	156-157
8	1	90	15	1-20	160-165
	2-4	58-59		21-28	166-168
	5-13	90-92		29-31	169-170
	14-17	54-56		32-39 ^a	170-172
	18	119		39 ^b	172-173
	19-22	202-203	16	1-4	173-174
	23-27	119-121		5-12	174-176
	28-34	121-127		13-20	177-178
9	1 ^a	127		21-28	179-182
	1 ^b	128	17	1-8	182-185
	2-8	61-64		9-13	185-187
	9	64-65		14-20	188-192
	10-17	65-68		22-23	193
	18-26	128-135		24-27	194
	27-34	136	18	1-35	195-201

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

MATTHEW — continued

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
19	1-2	244	26	21-25	332-334
	3-12	244-247		26-29	335-336
	13-15	247-248		30	341
	16-30	248-253		31-35	337-339
20	1-16	253-254		36-46	346-350
	17-19	255-256		47-56	351-355
	20-28	257-259		57 ^a	356
	29-34	260-262		57 ^b	359
21	1-11	266-272		58	357-358
	12-16	274-275		59-68	359-362
	17	278		69-75	362-366
	18-12	273-274	27	1	366-367
	20-22	279-280		2	368
	23-46	281-287		3-10	367-368
22	1-14	287-288		11-14	368-370
	15-22	289-291		15-31	372-379
	23-33	292-295		32	380
	34-40	295-297		33-56	381-389
	41-46	298-299		57-61	391-394
23	1-39	300-302		62-66	395
24	1-51	304-318	28	1	398
25	1-46	318-320		2-4	397
26	1-5	321-322		5-8	399-401
	6-13	322-325		9-10	403
	14-16	325-326		11-15	405
	17-19	327-328		16-20	412-414
	20	329			

MARK

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
1	1-6	21-24	1	9-11	28-30
	7-8	26-27		12-13	30

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

MARK — continued

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
1	14 ^a	43	9	2-8	182-185
	14 ^b -15	46-47		9-13	185-187
	16-20	50-52		14-29	187-192
	21-34	52-56		30-32	192-193
	35-39	56-57		33 ^a	194
	40-45	58-60		33 ^b -50	195-199
2	1-12	60-64	10	I	244
	13-14	64-65		2-12	244-246
	15-22	65-68		13-16	247-248
	23-28	71-73		17-31	248-253
3	1-6	74-76		32-34	254-256
	7-12	76-77		35-45	257-259
4	13-19 ^a	78-79	11	46-52	260-262
	19 ^b -35	100-106		1-11	266-273
	1-34	106-117		12-14	273-274
	35-41	119-121		15-18	274-276
5	1-20	121-128		19	278
	21-43	128-135		20-25	279-280
6	1-6 ^a	136-138	12	27-33	281-283
	6 ^b -13	138-143		1-12	283-288
	14-16	143-144		13-17	289-291
	17-20	41-42		18-27	292-295
	21-29	98-100		28-34 ^a	296-297
	30	145		34 ^b -37 ^a	298-299
	31-44	146-152	13	37 ^b -40	299-301
	45-46	152-153		41-44	303-304
	47-52	153-156		1-37	304-318
	53-55	156-157	14	1-2	321-322
	56	160		3-9	322-325
	1-23	160-165		10-11	325-326
7	24-30	166-168		12-16	327-328
	31-37	169-170		17	329
	1-9	170-172		18-21	332-333
	10-13 ^a	172-174		22-25	335-336
8	13 ^b -21	174-176		26	341
	22-26	176-177		27-31	337-339
	27-30	177-178		32-42	346-350
	31-38	179-181		43-52	351-355
9	I	181-182		53 ^a	356

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

MARK — continued

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
14	53 ^b	359	16	1	396
	54	357-358		2-5 ^a	398
	55-65	359-362		5 ^b -8	399-401
	66-72	362-366		9	402
15	1 ^a	366-367		10-11	404
	1 ^b -5	368-371		12	405
	6-20	373-379		13	407-408
	21	380		14	408-409
	22-41	381-390		15-18	413-414
	42-47	391-394		19-20	414-416

LUKE

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
1	1-4	1	3	21-23 ^a	28-30
	5-25	5-6		23 ^b -38	3-4
	26-38	7	4	1-13	30-32
	39-56	8-9		14-15	46-47
	57-79	9-10		16-30	48-49
	80 ^a	18		31 ^a	49
	80 ^b	20		31 ^b -41	53-56
2	1-7	11-12		42-44	56-57
	8-20	12-13	5	1-11	50-52
	21	13		12-16	58-60
	22-39 ^a	14-15		17-26	60-64
	39 ^b	17		27-28	64-65
	40	18		29-39	65-69
	41-51	18-19	6	1-5	71-73
	52	19		6-11	74-76
3	1-6	21-24		12-16	78-79
	7-14	25-26		17-49	80-90
	15-18	26-27	7	1-10	90-92
	19-20	41		11-17	92-93

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

LUKE — continued

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
7	18-35	93-95	16	1-31	234-236
	36-50	96-97	17	1-10	236-237
8	1-3	97		11-19	241
	4-18	106-115		20-37	242
	19-21	104-106	18	1-14	243
	22-25	119-121		15-17	247-248
	26-39	121-128		18-30	248-253
	40-56	128-135		31-34	255-256
9	1-6	139-143		35-43	260-262
	7-9	143-144	19	1-10	263
	10 ^a	145		11-28	263-264
	10 ^b -17	147-151		29-44	266-272
	18-21	177-178		45-48	274-276
	22-27	179-182	20	1-19	281-287
	28-36 ^a	182-185		20-26	289-291
	36 ^b	187		27-39	292-295
	37-43 ^a	187-191		40-44	298-299
	43 ^b -45	192-193		45-47	299-301
	46-50	195-197	21	1-4	303-304
	51-56	201-202		5-36	304-317
	57-62	202-203		37	297
10	1-24	213-214		38	298
	25-37	215	22	1-2	321-322
	38-42	216		3-6	325-326
11	1-13	216-217		7-13	327-328
	14-36	217-219		14-18	329
	37-54	219-220		19-20	335-336
12	1-12	220-221		21-23	332-333
	13-59	221-223		24-30	330-331
13	1-9	224		31-38	338-339
	10-21	224-225		39	341
	22	228		40-46	346-349
	23-30	228-229		47-53	351-355
	31-35	229		54 ^a	356
14	1-24	230-231		54 ^b -55	357-358
	25-35	231-232		56-62	362-366
15	1-32	232-234		63-65	361-362

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

LUKE — continued

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
22	66-71	366-367	24	1-3	398
23	1-7	368-371		4-9 ^a	399-401
	8-12	372		9 ^b -11	404
	13-25	372-379		12	401-402
	26-32	380-381		13-32	405-406
	33-49	381-390		33-35	407-408
	50-56 ^a	391-394		36-43	408-409
	56 ^b	396		44-49	413-414
	56 ^c	395		50-53	414-415

JOHN

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
1	1-5	2	5	1-47	69-71
	6-8	22-23	6	1-13	146-152
	9-13	2		14-17 ^a	152-153
	14 ^a	12		17 ^b -21 ^a	153-155
	14 ^b	417		21 ^b	156
	15	33-34		22-71	157-160
	16-18	417	7	1	160
	19-28	32-33		2-9	194-195
	29-51	33-35		10	201-202
2	1-11	36-37		11-52	204-206
	12	37		53	206
	13-22	37-38	8	1-11	206-207
	23-25	38		12-59	207-209
3	1-21	39-40	9	1-41	210-212
	22-36	40-41	10	1-21	212-213
4	1-4	43		22-39	225-226
	5-43	44-45		40-42	227
	44	43	11	1-44	237-239
	45	46-47		45-54	240
	46-54	47-48		55-57	265

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

JOHN — continued

Chap.	Verse	Page	Chap.	Verse	Page
12	I	265	18	19-23	356
	2-8	322-324		24	358-359
	9-11	265		25-27	364-366
	12-19	266-272		28-38	368-371
	20-50	276-278		39-40	373
13	I-20	329-331	19	I-16	376-379
	21-30	332-334		17 ^a	380
	31-32	335		17b-37	381-390
	33-38	337-338		38-42	391-394
14	I-31	339-341	20	I-2	398-399
15	I-27	341-343		3-10	401-402
16	I-33	343-344		11-17	402-403
17	I-26	345-346		18	404
18	I	346-347		19 ^a	407
	2-12	351-354		19b-25	408-410
	13-14	356		26-30	410
	15-16	57		31	417
	17	362-363	21	I-23	411-412
	18	357-358		24-25	417

THE PARABLES OF JESUS

Parables from Nature —

	Section
The Fig Tree	144
The Good and Bad Trees	53, 60
The Mustard Seed	61, 104
The Salt that has Lost its Savor	53
The Seed Growing of Itself	61

Parables from Individual Experiences —

The Blind Guiding the Blind	53
The Good Samaritan	98
The Hidden Treasure	61
The Importunate Friend	100
The Importunate Widow	120
The Mote and the Beam	53
The Rich Fool	102
The Rich Man and Lazarus	113
The Two Sons	137
The Unclean Spirit that Returned	60, 101

Parables from Household and Social Life —

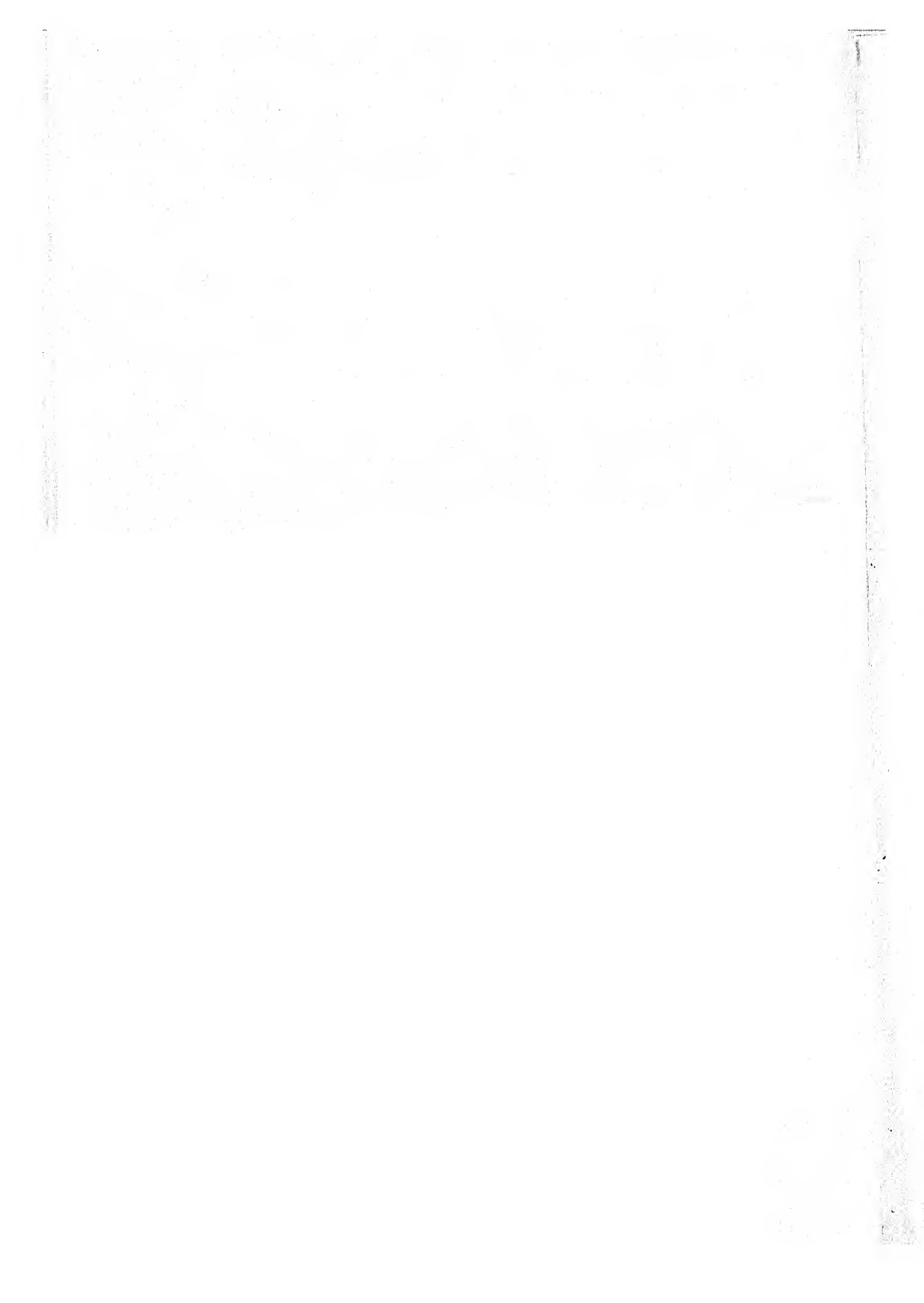
The Chief Seats	110
The Children in the Market Place	56
The Divided House	60, 101
The Feast for the Poor	110
The Great Supper	110
The Householder's Treasure	61
The Lamp under the Bushel	53, 61, 101
The New Patch on an Old Garment	47
The New Wine in Old Wine-skins	47
The Leaven	60, 101
The Lost Coin	112
The Lost Son	112
The Marriage Feast of the King's Son	137
The Master and the Thief	102, 144

THE PARABLES OF JESUS

	Section
The Porter	144
The Sons of the Bride-chamber	47
The Strong Man's House	60, 101
The Ten Virgins	144
The Unmerciful Servant	90
The Unprofitable Servant	114
The Watchful Servants	102
The Wily Steward	113
The Wise Servant	102, 144
Parables from Agricultural and Pastoral Life —	
The Barren Fig Tree	103
The Good Shepherd	96
The Laborers in the Vineyard	124
The Lost Sheep	90, 112
The Sheep and the Goats	144
The Sower	61
The Tares	61
The Wicked Husbandmen	137
Parables from Commercial Life and Building —	
The Net	61
The Pearl of Great Price	61
The Pounds	129
The Rejected Stone	137
The Talents	144
The Tower	111
The Two Debtors	57
The Wise and Foolish Builders	53
Parables from Religious Life —	
The Pharisee and the Publican	120
Parables from National Life —	
The City Set on a Hill	53
The Warring King	111



**A COMBINED HARMONY
OF THE GOSPELS**



PART I

INTRODUCTION

1. THE DEDICATION OF LUKE'S GOSPEL

Luke 1:1-4

1	Forasmuch
as many have	
taken in hand	

to draw up a narrative concerning those matters which have been
'fulfilled among us, 2 even as they delivered them unto us, who from
the beginning were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, 3 it
seemed good to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately
from the first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus;
4 that thou mightest know the certainty concerning the 'things 'wherein
thou wast instructed.

¹Or, fully established.

²Gr. words.

³Or, which thou wast taught by word of mouth.

2. THE PRE-INCARNATE EXISTENCE OF CHRIST

John 1:1-5, 9-13

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the

Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made through him ; and without him 'was not anything made that hath been made. 4 In him was life ; and the life was the light of men. 5 And the light shineth in the darkness ; and the darkness 'apprehended it not. 9 'There was the true light, *even the light* which lighteth 'every man, coming into the world. 10 He was in the world, and the world was made through him, and the world knew him not. 11 He came unto 'his own, and they that were his own received him not. 12 But as many as received him, to them gave he the right to become children of God, *even* to them that believe on his name ; 13 who were 'born, not of 'blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

¹Or, *was not anything made. That which hath been made was life in him ; and the life &c.*
²Or, *overcame* (See ch. 12:35, Gr.). ³Or, *the true light, which lighteth every man, was coming.* ⁴Or, *every man as he cometh.* ⁵Gr. *his own things.* ⁶Or, *begotten.* ⁷Gr. *bloods.*

3. THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS

Matt 1:1-17

Luke 3:23b-38

1 'The book of
 t h e 'generation
 of Jesus Christ,

the son of David, the son of Abraham. 2 Abraham begat Isaac ; and Isaac begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren ; 3 and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar ; and Perez begat Hezron ; and Hezron begat 'Ram ; 4 and 'Ram begat Amminadab ; and Amminadab begat Nahshon ;

INTRODUCTION

Matt. 1

Luke 3

and Nahshon begat Salmon; 5

and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; 6 and Jesse begat David the king.

And David begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Uriah; 7 and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat Abijah; and Abijah begat 'Asa; 8 and 'Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Uzziah; 9 and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahaz; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; 10 and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Manasseh begat 'Amon; and 'Amon begat Josiah; 11 and Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, at the time of the 'carrying away to Babylon.

12 And after the 'carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah begat 'Shealtiel; and 'Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel; 13 and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; 14 and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; 15 and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; 16 and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the 'carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the 'carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations.

23 [And Jesus

himself, when he

began to teach,

was about thirty years of age,] being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the son of Heli, 24 the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, 25 the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, 26 the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda, 27 the son of Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of 'Shealtiel, the son of Neri, 28 the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of Er, 29 the son of Jesus, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, 30 the son of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonam, the son of Eliakim, 31 the son of Melea, the son of Menna, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David, 32

INTRODUCTION

Luke 3

the son of Jesse,
the son of Obed,

the son of Boaz, the son of ¹Salmon, the son of Nahshon, 33 the son of Amminadab, ²the son of ¹⁰Arni, the son of Hezron, the son of Perez, the son of Judah, 34 the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor, 35 the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah, 36 the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech, 37 the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, 38 the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.*

¹Or, *The genealogy of Jesus Christ.*

²Or, *birth*; as in ver. 18.

³Gr. *Aram.*

⁴Gr. *Asaph.*

⁵Gr. *Amos.*

⁶Or, *removal to Babylon.*

⁷Gr. *Salathiel.*

⁸Some ancient authorities write *Sala.*

⁹Many ancient authorities insert *the son of Admin*; and one writes *Admin* for *Amminadab*.

¹⁰Some ancient authorities write *Aram.*

* Many scholars are of the opinion that Matthew gives the legal descent of Jesus through Joseph, while Luke gives the actual genealogy through Mary.

PART II

THE BIRTH AND FIRST THIRTY YEARS OF JOHN THE BAPTIST AND OF JESUS

PROBABLY B.C. 6 TO A.D. 26

4. THE ANNUNCIATION TO ZACHARIAS OF THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

The Temple, Jerusalem. Probably B. C. 6

Luke 1:5-25

5	There was in
the	days of
Herod,	king of

Judæa, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abijah: and he had a wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. 6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. 7 And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* 'well stricken in years.

8 Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, 9 according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to enter into the temple of the Lord and burn incense. 10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the hour of incense. 11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. 12 And Zacharias was troubled when

	Luke 1
	he saw <i>him</i> , and
	fear fell upon

him. 13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias : because thy supplication is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. 14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness ; and many shall rejoice at his birth. 15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and he shall drink no wine nor ¹strong drink ; and he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit, even from his mother's womb. 16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn unto the Lord their God. 17 And he shall ²go before his face in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient *to walk* in the wisdom of the just ; to make ready for the Lord a people prepared *for him*. 18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this ? for I am an old man, and my wife ³well stricken in years. 19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God ; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these good tidings. 20 And behold, thou shalt be silent and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall come to pass, because thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. 21 And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and they marvelled ⁴while he tarried in the ⁵temple. 22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them : and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the ⁶temple : and he continued making signs unto them, and remained dumb. 23 And it came to pass, when the days of his ministration were fulfilled, he departed unto his house.

24 And after these days Elizabeth his wife conceived ; and she hid herself five months, saying, 25 Thus hath the Lord done unto me in the days wherein he looked upon *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

¹Gr. *advanced in their days*. ²Or, *sanctuary*. ³Gr. *sikera*. ⁴Some ancient authorities read *come nigh before his face*. ⁵Gr. *advanced in her days*. ⁶Or, *at his tarrying*.

5. THE ANNUNCIATION TO MARY OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Nazareth. End of B. C. 6 or beginning of B. C. 5

Luke 1:26-38

26 Now in the
sixth month the
angel Gabriel

was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, 27 to a virgin betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. 28 And he came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art 'highly favored, the Lord is with thee.' 29 But she was greatly troubled at the saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this might be. 30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found 'favor with God. 31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: 33 and he shall reign over the house of Jacob 'for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. 34 And Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? 35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee: wherefore also 'the holy thing which is begotten 'shall be called the Son of God. 36 And behold, Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her that 'was called barren. 37 For no word from God shall be void of power. 38 And Mary said, Behold, the 'handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

¹Or, *endued with grace.*

³Or, *grace.* ⁴Gr. *unto the ages.*
ancient authorities insert of thee.

²Many ancient authorities add *blessed art thou among women.* See v. 42.

⁵Or, *that which is to be born shall be called holy, the Son of God.* ⁶Some

⁷Or, *is.* ⁸Gr. *bondmaid.*

6. MARY'S VISIT TO ELISABETH

Judaea. Beginning of B. C. 5

Luke 1:39-56

39 And Mary
arose in these
days and went

into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah ; 40 and entered into the house of Zacharias and saluted Elisabeth. 41 And it came to pass, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb ; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Spirit ; 42 and she lifted up her voice with a loud cry, and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb. 43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come unto me ? 44 For behold, when the voice of thy salutation came into mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. 45 And blessed *is* she that *'*believed ; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things which have been spoken to her from the Lord. 46 And Mary said,

- My soul doth magnify the Lord,
47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.
48 For he hath looked upon the low estate of his *'*handmaid :
For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.
49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things ;
And holy is his name.
50 And his mercy is unto generations and generations
On them that fear him.
51 He hath showed strength with his arm ;
He hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their heart.
52 He hath put down princes from *their* thrones,
And hath exalted them of low degree.
53 The hungry he hath filled with good things ;
And the rich he hath sent empty away.
54 He hath given help to Israel his servant,
That he might remember mercy
55 (As he spake unto our fathers)
Toward Abraham and his seed for ever.

Luke 1
56 And Mary
abode with her

about three months, and returned unto her house.

¹Or, believed that there shall be. ²Gr. bondmaid. ³Or, by.

7. THE BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Judaea. Spring of B. C. 5

Luke 1:57-79

57 Now Elisa-
beth's time was
fulfilled t h a t

she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. 58 And her neighbors and her kinsfolk heard that the Lord had magnified his mercy towards her; and they rejoiced with her. 59 And it came to pass on the eighth day, that they came to circumcise the child; and they would have called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. 60 And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. 61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. 62 And they made signs to his father, what he would have him called. 63 And he asked for a writing tablet, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. 64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, blessing God. 65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea. 66 And all that heard them laid them up in their heart, saying, What then shall this child be? For the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel;

For he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people,

69 And hath raised up a horn of salvation for us

In the house of his servant David

70 (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets that have been

Luke 1
from of old),
71 Salvation

- from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us ;
- 72 To show mercy towards our fathers,
And to remember his holy covenant ;
- 73 The oath which he swore unto Abraham our father,
- 74 To grant unto us that we being delivered out of the hand of our
enemies
Should serve him without fear,
- 75 In holiness and righteousness before him all our days.
- 76 Yea and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Most High :
For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to make ready his
ways ;
- 77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people
In the remission of their sins,
- 78 Because of the 'tender mercy of our God,
'Whereby the dayspring from on high 'shall visit us,
- 79 To shine upon them that sit in darkness and the shadow of
death ;
To guide our feet into the way of peace.

¹Or, heart of mercy.

²Or, Wherein.

³Many ancient authorities read hath visited us.

8. THE ANNUNCIATION TO JOSEPH OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Nazareth, B. C. 5

Matt. 1:18-25a

18 Now the
'birth 'of Jesus
Christ was on

this wise : When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before
they came together she was found with child of the Holy Spirit. 19 And
Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a
public example, was minded to put her away privily. 20 But when he
thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him

Matt. 1
in a dream, say-
ing, Joseph, thou
son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is
'conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. 21 And she shall bring forth a son;
and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for it is he that shall save his people
from their sins. 22 Now all this is come to pass, that it might be ful-
filled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,

23 Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth
a son,

And they shall call his name 'Immanuel [Is. 7:14];
which is, being interpreted, God with us. 24 And Joseph arose from his
sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto
him his wife; 25 and knew her not till she had brought forth a son:

¹Or, generation: as in ver. 1.

²Some ancient authorities read of the Christ.

³Gr. begotten.

⁴Gr. Emmanuel.

9. THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Bethlehem. Autumn of B. C. 5

Luke 2:1-7

John 1:14^a

1	Now it came to pass in those days, there went
---	---

out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all 'the world should be enrolled.
2 This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was governor of
Syria.* 3 And all went to enrol themselves, every one to his own city.
4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into
Judæa, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, because he was of

* Augustus inaugurated a periodical census every fourteen years from B. C. 8 on.
The second occurred in A.D. 6 (Acts 5:37). Quirinius was twice governor of Syria,
the first time being B.C. 10-7. Other data, such as the reference to the temple in John
2:20, make it impossible to place the date of Christ's birth so early; B.C. 5 is much more
probable. We must assume, therefore, that there was some delay in carrying out the
census in Palestine.

	Luke 2	John 3
	the house and family of David ;	
5 to enrol himself with Mary, who was betrothed to him, being great with child. 6 And it came to pass, while they were there, the days were fulfilled that she should be delivered. 7 And she brought forth her first-born son; and she wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him		
	in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.	14 And the Word became flesh, and 'dwelt among us,

¹Gr. *the inhabited earth.* ²Gr. *tabernacled.*

10. THE ANGELS AND THE SHEPHERDS

Near Bethlehem

Luke 2:8-20

8 And there were shepherds in the same
--

country abiding in the field, and keeping 'watch by night over their flock. 9 And an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. 10 And the angel said unto them, Be not afraid; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all the people: 11 for there is born to you this day in the city of David a Saviour, who is 'Christ the Lord. 12 And this *is* the sign unto you: Ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, and lying in a manger. 13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest,
And on earth 'peace among 'men in whom he is well pleased.

Luke 2
15 And it came
to pass, when the

angels went away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing that is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. 16 And they came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in the manger. 17 And when they saw it, they made known concerning the saying which was spoken to them about this child. 18 And all that heard it wondered at the things which were spoken unto them by the shepherds. 19 But Mary kept all these sayings, pondering them in her heart. 20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, even as it was spoken unto them.

¹Or, night-watches. ²Or, Anointed Lord. ³Many ancient authorities read *peace, good pleasure among men.* ⁴Gr. men of good pleasure. ⁵Or, saying. ⁶Or, things.

11. THE CIRCUMCISION AND NAMING OF JESUS

Eight days after birth

Matt. 1:25b

25b and he called
his name JESUS.

Luke 2:21

21 And when
eight days were
fulfilled for cir-
cumcising him,
his name was
called Jesus,
which was so
called by the
angel before he
was conceived in
the womb.

12. THE PRESENTATION OF JESUS IN THE TEMPLE

Jerusalem. Forty days after birth

Luke 2:22-39a

22 And when the
days of their
purification

'according to the law of Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord 23 (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord [Ex. 13:2,12]), 24 and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons [Lev. 12:8; 5:11]. 25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was righteous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Spirit was upon him. 26 And it had been revealed unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. 27 And he came in the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning him after the custom of the law, 28 then he received him into his arms, and blessed God, and said,

29 Now lettest thou thy 'servant depart, 'Lord,

According to thy word, in peace;

30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all peoples;

32 A light for 'revelation to the Gentiles,

And the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And his father and his mother were marvelling at the things which were spoken concerning him; 34 and Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this *child* is set for the falling and the rising of many in Israel; and for a sign which is spoken against; 35 yea and a sword shall pierce through thine own soul; that thoughts out of many hearts may be revealed. 36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher (she was ⁵of a great age, having lived with a husband seven years from her virginity, 37 and she had been a widow even unto fourscore and four years), who departed not from the temple, worshipping with fastings and supplications night and day. 38 And coming

Luke 2

up at that very
hour she gave

thanks unto God, and spake of him to all them that were looking for the redemption of Jerusalem. 39 And when they had accomplished all things that were according to the law of the Lord, they returned...

¹Lev. xii. 2-6.

²Gr. bondservant.

³Gr. Master.

⁴Or, the unwilling of the Gentiles.

⁵Gr. advanced in many days.

13. THE VISIT OF THE WISE MEN

Matt. 2:1-12

1 Now when Jesus
was born in
Bethlehem of

Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, 'wise-men from the east came to Jerusalem, saying, 2 'Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we saw his star in the east, and are come to 'worship him. 3 And when Herod the king heard it, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. 4 And gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Christ should be born. 5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written through the prophet,

6 And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah,

Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah:

For out of thee shall come forth a governor,

Who shall be shepherd of my people Israel [Mic. 5:2].

7 Then Herod privily called the 'wise-men, and learned of them exactly 'what time the star appeared. 8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search out exactly concerning the young child; and when ye have found *him*, bring me word, that I also may come and 'worship him. 9 And they, having heard the king, went their way; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. 10 And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. 11 And they came into the house and

Matt. 2

saw the young
child with Mary

his mother; and they fell down and worshipped him; and opening their treasures they offered unto him gifts, gold and frankincense and myrrh.
12 And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

¹Gr. Magi. Compare Esther i.13; Dan. ii.12; Acts xiii.6.8. ²Or, Where is the King of the Jews that is born? ³The Greek word denotes an act of reverence whether paid to a creature (see ch. iv.9; xviii.26), or to the Creator (see ch. iv.10). ⁴Or, the time of the star that appeared.

14. THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT AND THE SLAUGHTER OF THE BETHLEHEM CHILDREN

Matt. 2:13-18

13 Now when
they were departed,
behold, an

angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I tell thee: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.
14 And he arose and took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt; 15 and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt did I call my son [Hos. 11:1].

16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the 'wise-men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had exactly learned of the 'wise-men.
17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet, saying,

18 A voice was heard in Ramah,

Weeping and great mourning,

Rachel weeping for her children;

And she would not be comforted, because they are not [Jer. 31:15].

¹Gr. Magi.

15. THE RETURN FROM EGYPT TO NAZARETH

B. C. 4

Matt. 2:19-23

Luke 2:39b

19 But when
Herod was dead,
behold, an angel

of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, 20 Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young child's life. 21 And he arose and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judæa in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being warned of God in a dream,

he withdrew

into
the parts of Galilee, 23 and came and dwelt in

a city called Nazareth;

that it might be fulfilled which was spoken through the prophets, 'that he should be called a Nazarene.

39b they returned

into Galilee, to

their own city Nazareth.

¹Isa. xi. 1 in the Heb. ?

16. THE CHILDHOOD OF JOHN THE BAPTIST IN JUDÆA

Luke 1:80a

80 And the child
grew, and waxed
strong in spirit,

17. THE CHILDHOOD OF JESUS AT NAZARETH

B. C. 4 to A. D. 8

Luke 2:40

40 And the child
grew, and waxed
strong, 'filled
with wisdom :
and the grace of
God was upon
him.

¹Gr. *becoming full of wisdom.*

18. THE VISIT OF JESUS TO THE PASSOVER FEAST AT JERUSALEM WHEN TWELVE YEARS OF AGE

A. D. 8

Luke 2:41-51

41 And his pa-
rents went every
year to Jerusa-

lem at the feast of the passover. 42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up after the custom of the feast ; 43 and when they had fulfilled the days, as they were returning, the boy Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem;

Luke 2
and his parents
knew it not; 44

but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day's journey; and they sought for him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance: 45 and when they found him not, they returned to Jerusalem, seeking for him. 46 And it came to pass, after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both hearing them, and asking them questions: 47 and all that heard him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. 48 And when they saw him, they were astonished; and his mother said unto him, ²Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I sought thee sorrowing. 49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? knew ye not that I must be ³in my Father's house? 50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them. 51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was subject unto them: and his mother kept all *these* sayings in her heart.

¹Or, doctors. See ch. v. 17; Acts v. 34.
he things of my Father.

²Gr. Child.

³Or, about my Father's business. Gr. in

⁴Or, things.

19. JESUS FROM YOUTH TO MANHOOD AT NAZARETH

A. D. 8 to 26

Luke 2:52

52 And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and men.

¹Or, age. ²Or, grace.

20. JOHN THE BAPTIST'S PRIVATE LIFE IN THE DESERT

Luke 1:80*b*

80b and [*John*]*
was in the deserts
till the day of
his showing unto
Israel.

* Words in italics and square brackets have been inserted in a few places only, for the sake of clarity or proper grammatical construction in the composite narrative.

PART III

THE PREPARATORY MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

PROBABLY FROM SPRING TO AUTUMN, A. D. 26

21. THE FIRST PUBLIC APPEARANCE OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Judæa. Spring of A. D. 26

Matt. 3:1-6

Mark 1:1-6

Luke 3:1-6

John 1:6-8

1 The beginning
of the 'gospel
of Jesus Christ,
'the Son of God.

1 Now in the fif-
teenth year of the
reign of Tiberius
Cæsar,* Pontius
Pilate being
governor of Ju-
dæa, and Herod

* Tiberius reigned jointly with Augustus for about two years before the latter's death in A. D. 14, and (according to Roman historians) "was invested with equal authority in all the provinces."

THE PREPARATORY MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Matt. 3	Mark 1	Luke 3	John 1
<p>1 And in those days cometh John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judæa,</p> <p>saying,</p> <p>2 Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.</p>	<p>4 John came, who baptized in the wilderness</p> <p>and preached the baptism of repentance unto remission of sins.</p>	<p>being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the region of Ituræa and Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene,</p> <p>2 in the high-priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.</p> <p>3 And he came into all the region round about the Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance unto remission of sins;</p>	<p>6 There came a man, sent from God, whose name was John.</p>

Matt. 3	Mark 1	Luke 3	John 1
<p>3 For this is he that was spoken of</p> <p>through Isaiah the prophet, saying,</p> <p>The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight.</p>	<p>2 Even as it is written</p> <p>in Isaiah the prophet,</p> <p>Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, Who shall prepare thy way [Mal. 3:1];</p> <p>3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight;</p>	<p>4 as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet,</p> <p>The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight.</p> <p>5 Every valley shall be filled,</p>	<p>7 The same came for witness, that he might bear witness of the light, that all might believe through him. 8 He was not the light, but <i>came</i> that he might bear witness of the light.</p>

THE PREPARATORY MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Matt. 3

Mark 1

Luke 3

4 Now John himself had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his food was locusts and wild honey. 5 Then went out unto him Jerusalem, and all Judæa, and all the region round about the Jordan; 6 and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and *had* a leathern girdle about his loins, and did eat locusts and wild honey. 5 And there went out unto him all the country of Judæa, and all they of Jerusalem; and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

And every mountain and hill shall be brought low; And the crooked shall become straight, And the rough ways smooth; 6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God [Is. 40:3-5].

¹Or, *good tidings*: and so elsewhere. ancient authorities read *in the prophets*.

²Some ancient authorities omit *the Son of God*.

³Some

22. A SPECIMEN OF JOHN'S PREACHING *

Matt. 3:7-10

7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said unto them, Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of ¹repentance: 9 and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 10 And even now the axe lieth at the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Luke 3:7-14

7 He said therefore to the multitudes that went out to be baptized of him, Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of ²repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 9 And even now the axe also lieth at the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

10 And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then must we do? 11 And he answered and said unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath food, let him do likewise. 12 And there came also ³publicans to be baptized, and they said unto him, Teacher, what must we do? 13 And he said unto them, Extort no more than that which is appointed

* This is the first of the sections in which Matthew and Luke present similar material which is not derived from Mark. The second common source of these two Gospels is called the Logia (Discourses).

Luke 3

you. 14 And 'soldiers also asked

him, saying, And we, what must we do? And he said unto them, Extort from no man by violence, neither accuse *any one* wrongfully; and be content with your wages.

¹Or, for baptism.

⁴Gr. soldiers on service.

²Or, your repentance.

³That is, collectors or renters of Roman taxes.

23. THE ANNOUNCEMENT OF THE COMING MESSIAH

Matt. 3:11-12

Mark 1:7-8

Luke 3:15-18

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men reasoned in their hearts concerning John, whether haply he were the Christ; 16 John answered,

7 And he preached,

saying,

saying unto them all,

11 I indeed baptize you 'in water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I,

There cometh after me he that is mightier than I,

I indeed baptize you with water; but there cometh he that is mightier than I,

THE PREPARATORY MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Matt. 3
 whose shoes I am
 not ²worthy to bear:
 he shall baptize
 you 'in the Holy
 Spirit and *in* fire:
 12 whose fan is
 in his hand, and
 he will thoroughly
 cleanse his thresh-
 ing-floor; and he will
 gather his wheat
 into the garner,
 but the chaff he
 will burn up with
 unquenchable fire.

Mark 1
the latchet of
whose shoes I
am not ²worthy
to stoop down
and unloose.* 8
I baptized you
'in water; but

he shall baptize you
 'in the Holy Spirit.

Luke 3
 the latchet of
 whose shoes I am not
²worthy to unloose:
 he shall baptize
 you 'in the Holy
 Spirit and *in*
 fire: 17 whose
 fan is in his
 hand, thoroughly
 to cleanse his
 threshing-floor,
 and to gather
 the wheat into
 his garner; but
 the chaff he will
 burn up with un-
 quenchable fire.

18 With many
 other exhorta-
 tions therefore
 preached he 'good
 tidings unto the
 people;

¹Or, *with*. ²Gr. *sufficient*. ³Or, *the gospel*.

* Note Matt. 3:11.

PART IV

THE FIRST PUBLIC APPEARANCE OF THE MESSIAH

PROBABLY THE AUTUMN OF A. D. 26

24. THE BAPTISM OF JESUS

The Jordan River

Matt. 3:13-17	Mark 1:9-11	Luke 3:21-23a
	9 And it came to pass in those days,	21 Now it came to pass,
	that Jesus	when all the people were bap- tized, that, Jesus also
13 Then cometh Je- sus from Galilee	came from Nazareth of Galilee,	
to the Jordan unto John, to be bap- tized of him. 14 But John would		

THE FIRST PUBLIC APPEARANCE OF THE MESSIAH

Matt. 3	Mark 1	Luke 3
have hindered him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? 15 But Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer ^{'it} now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffereth him. 16 And Jesus, when he		
was baptized,	and	having been
went up straightway from the water:	was baptized of John ^{'in} the Jordan.	baptized, and
and lo, the heavens were opened ^{'unto} him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove,	¹⁰ And straightway coming up out of the water,	praying,
and coming upon him; 17 and lo, a voice out of the heavens, saying, ⁴ This is my beloved	he saw the heavens rent asunder, and the Spirit	the heaven was opened, ²² and the Holy Spirit descended
	as a dove descending	in a bodily form,
	upon him: ¹¹ and a voice	as a dove, upon him,
	came out of the heavens, Thou art my beloved	and a voice came out of heaven, Thou art my beloved

THE FIRST PUBLIC APPEARANCE OF THE MESSIAH

Matt. 3	Mark 1	Luke 3
Son, in whom I am well pleased.	Son, in thee I am well pleased.	Son; in thee I am well pleased.
		23 And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age,

¹Or, me. ²Gr. *into*. ³Some ancient authorities omit *unto him*.
beloved in whom I am well pleased. See ch. 12. 18.

⁴Or, *This is my Son; my*

25. THE TEMPTATION OF JESUS

The Wilderness of Judæa

Matt. 4:1-11	Mark 1:12-13	Luke 4:1-13
1 Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.	12 And straightway the Spirit driveth him forth into the wilderness. 13 And he was in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan; and he was with the wild beasts;	1 And Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and was led in the Spirit in the wilderness 2 during forty days, being tempted of the devil.
2 And when he had fasted forty days		And he did eat nothing in those days:

Matt. 4

and forty nights,
he afterward
hungered. 3 And the tempter came
and said unto him, If thou art the
Son of God, command that these
stones become 'bread. 4 But he an-
swered and said, It is written, Man
shall not live by bread alone, but by
every word that proceedeth out of
the mouth of God [Dt. 8:3]. 5 Then the
devil taketh him into the holy city ;
and he set him on the ²pinnacle of
the temple, 6 and saith unto him,

If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself
down : for it is written,

He shall give his angels charge concern-
ing thee :

and,

On their hands they shall bear thee up,
Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a
stone.

7 Jesus said unto him,

Again it is
written, Thou shalt not make trial
of the Lord thy God [Dt. 6:16]. 8
Again, the devil taketh him un-
to an exceeding high mountain, and
showeth him all the kingdoms of
the world, and the glory of them ;

9 and he said unto him, All these
things will I give thee, if thou wilt

Luke 4

and when they were
completed, he hun-

gered. 3 And the devil said unto him, If
thou art the Son of God, command this
stone that it become 'bread. 4 And Jesus
answered unto him, It is written, Man
shall not live by bread alone. 9 And he
led him to Jerusalem, and set him on the
²pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him,

If thou art the Son of God, cast
thyself down from hence : 10 for it
is written,

He shall give his angels charge
concerning thee, to guard thee :

11 and,

On their hands they shall bear
thee up,

Lest haply thou dash thy foot
against a stone [Ps. 91:11,12].

12 And Jesus answering said unto
him,

It is said, Thou shalt not make trial of
the Lord thy God. 5 And he led him up, and
showed him all the kingdoms of ²the world

in a moment of time. 6 And the
devil said unto him, To thee will I
give all this authority, and the glory
of them : for it hath been delivered
unto me ; and to whomsoever I
will I give it. 7 If thou therefore wilt

THE FIRST PUBLIC APPEARANCE OF THE MESSIAH

Matt. 4	Mark 1	Luke 4
fall down and 4worship me. 10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve [Dt. 6:13]. 11 Then the devil leaveth him; and behold, angels came and mini- stered unto him.		'worship before me, it shall all be thine. 8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, It is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. 13 And when the devil had com- pleted every temptation, he depart- ed from him 5for a season. 13b and the angels ministered unto him.

¹Gr. *loaves*. ²Gr. *wing*. ³Gr. *the inhabited earth*. ⁴The Greek word denotes an act of reverence, whether paid to a creature, or to the Creator (comp. marginal note on Matt. ii, 2). ⁵Or, *until*.

26. JOHN'S TESTIMONY TO THE COMMITTEE OF THE SANHEDRIN

Bethany, beyond the Jordan

John 1:19-28

19 And this is the witness of John, when the Jews sent unto him from Jerusalem priests and Levites to ask him, Who art thou? 20 And he confessed, and denied not; and he confessed, I am not the Christ. 21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he saith, I am not. Art thou the prophet? And he answered, No. 22 They said therefore unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself? 23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet [Is. 40:3]. 24 And they had been sent

John 1
from the Phari-
sees. 25 And they

asked him, and said unto him, Why then baptizest thou, if thou art not the Christ, neither Elijah, neither the prophet? 26 John answered them, saying, I baptize in water: in the midst of you standeth one whom ye know not, 27 even he that cometh after me, the latchet of whose shoe I am not worthy to unloose. 28 These things were done in Bethany beyond the Jordan, where John was baptizing.

¹Or, And certain had been sent from among the Pharisees. ²Or, with. ³Many ancient authorities read Bethabarah, some Betharabah. Comp. Josh. 15. 6, 61; 18. 22.

27. JOHN'S INTRODUCTION OF JESUS AS THE MESSIAH, AND CHRIST'S FIRST CONTACT WITH SOME OF THE TWELVE

John	
1:15	1:29-51
	29 On
	themor-
	row
15 John	he
	seeth
	Josus
	coming
	unto
	him,
	and
beareth	
witness	
of him,	
and cri-	saith,
eth, say-	
ing,	
	Behold,
	the
	Lamb

			John
		1:15	1:29-51
			of God,
			t h a t
			'taketh
			a w a y
			the sin
			of the
			world!
			30 This
		² This	is he of
		was he of	w h o m
		whom I	I said,
		said, He	A f t e r
		that com-	m e com-
		eth after	eth a
		m e i s	m a n
		become	who is
		beforeme:	become
		for he was	before
		³ before	
		me.	

me: for he was ³before me. 31 And I knew him not; but that he should be made manifest to Israel, for this cause came I baptizing 'in water. 32 And John bare witness, saying, I have beheld the Spirit descending as a dove out of heaven; and it abode upon him. 33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize 'in water, he said unto me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and abiding upon him, the same is he that baptizeth 'in the Holy Spirit. 34 And I have seen, and have borne witness that this is the Son of God.

35 Again on the morrow John was standing, and two of his disciples; 36 and he looked upon Jesus as he walked, and saith, Behold, the Lamb of God! 37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. 38 And Jesus turned, and beheld them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? And they said unto him, Rabbi (which is to say, being interpreted, Teacher), where abidest thou? 39 He saith unto them, Come, and ye shall see. They came therefore and saw where he abode; and they abode with him that day: it was about the tenth hour. 40 One of the two that heard John *speak*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. 41 He findeth first his own brother Simon, and saith unto him,

John 1

We have found
the Messiah

(which is, being interpreted, ⁵Christ). 42 He brought him unto Jesus. Jesus looked upon him, and said, Thou art Simon the son of 'John : thou shalt be called Cephas (which is by interpretation, ⁷Peter).

43 On the morrow he was minded to go forth into Galilee, and he findeth Philip : and Jesus saith unto him, Follow me. 44 Now Philip was from Bethsaida, of the city of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, wrote, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. 46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can any good thing come out of Nazareth ? Philip saith unto him, Come and see. 47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold, an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile ! 48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me ? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. 49 Nathanael answered him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God ; thou art King of Israel. 50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee underneath the fig tree, believest thou ? thou shalt see greater things than these. 51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye shall see the heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

¹Or, beareth the sin.

²Some ancient authorities read (*this was he that said*).

³Gr. first in regard

of me.

⁴Or, with.

⁵That is, Anointed. Comp. Ps. ii. 2.

⁶Gr. Joanes : called in Mt. xvi. 17, Jonah.

⁷That is, Rock or Stone.

PART V

THE BEGINNING OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY IN GALILEE, JUDÆA AND SAMARIA

PROBABLY FROM THE END OF A. D. 26 TO THE AUTUMN OF A. D. 27

28. JESUS WORKS HIS FIRST MIRACLE

Cana, in Galilee

John 2:1-11

1 And the
third day there
was a marriage

in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: 2 and Jesus also was bidden, and his disciples, to the marriage. 3 And when the wine failed, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. 4 And Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. 5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it. 6 Now there were six waterpots of stone set there after the Jews' manner of purifying, containing two or three firkins apiece. 7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. 8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the 'ruler of the feast. And they bare it. 9 And when the ruler of the feast tasted the water now become wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants that had drawn

John 2

the water knew),
the ruler of the

feast calleth the bridegroom, 10 and saith unto him, Every man setteth on first the good wine; and when *men* have drunk freely, *then* that which is worse: thou hast kept the good wine until now. 11 This beginning of his signs did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

¹Or, *steward*. ²Or, *that it had become*.

29. THE FIRST SOJOURN AT CAPERNAUM

John 2:12

12 After this
he went down to
Capernaum, he,

and his mother, and *his* brethren, and his disciples; and there they abode not many days.

30. THE FIRST* CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

The Passover at Jerusalem. Spring of A. D. 27

John 2:13-22

13 And the
passover of the
Jews was at

hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 14 And he found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting:

* Many scholars consider this incident to be identical with that recorded in the Synoptic Gospels as taking place during Passion Week (see sec. 134). It does not, however, seem unreasonable to suppose that Jesus felt impelled to express on two occasions His indignation at the habitual desecration of the temple.

John 2

15 and he made
a scourge of

cords, and cast all out of the temple, both the sheep and the oxen; and he poured out the changers' money, and overthrew their tables; 16 and to them that sold the doves he said, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. 17 His disciples remembered that it was written, Zeal for thy house shall eat me up [Ps. 69:9]. 18 The Jews therefore answered and said unto him, What sign showest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? 19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. 20 The Jews therefore said, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou raise it up in three days? 21 But he spake of the temple of his body. 22 When therefore he was raised from the dead, his disciples remembered that he spake this; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

¹Or, sanctuary.

31. SHALLOW BELIEF AT JERUSALEM

John 2:23-25

23 Now when
he was in Jeru-
salem at the

passover, during the feast, many believed on his name, beholding his signs which he did. 24 But Jesus did not trust himself unto them, for that he knew all men, 25 and because he needed not that any one should bear witness concerning man; for he himself knew what was in man.

¹Or, a man; for ... the man.

32. THE INTERVIEW OF NICODEMUS WITH JESUS

Jerusalem. During the Passover of A. D. 27

John 3:1-21

1 Now there
was a man of
the Pharisees,

named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: 2 the same came unto him by night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God; for no one can do these signs that thou doest, except God be with him. 3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except one be born 'anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter a second time into his mother's womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except one be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born 'anew. 8 The wind bloweth where it will, and thou hearest the voice thereof, but knowest not whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. 9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? 10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou the teacher of Israel, and understandest not these things? 11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that which we know, and bear witness of that which we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. 12 If I told you earthly things and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you heavenly things? 13 And no one hath ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven, *even* the Son of man, who is in heaven. 14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up; 15 that whosoever believeth may in him have eternal life.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have eternal life. 17 For God sent not the Son into the world to judge the world; but that the world should be saved through him. 18 He that believeth on him is not judged: he that believeth not hath been judged already, because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the judgment, that the light is come into the world, and men loved the dark-

John 3

ness rather than
the light; for

their works were evil. 20 For every one that ⁵doeth evil hateth the light, and cometh not to the light, lest his works should be ⁶reproved. 21 But he that doeth the truth cometh to the light, that his works may be made manifest, ⁷that they have been wrought in God.

¹Or, from above. See ver. 31; ch. xix. 11; Jas. i. 17; iii. 15, 17. ²Or, The Spirit breatheth. ³Many ancient authorities omit who is in heaven. ⁴Or, believeth in him may have. ⁵Or, practiseth. ⁶Or, convicted. ⁷Or, because.

33. THE PARALLEL MINISTRY OF JESUS IN JUDÆA AND OF JOHN THE BAPTIST IN SAMARIA — JOHN'S LOYALTY TO JESUS

John 3:22-36

22 After these
things came
Jesus and his

disciples into the land of Judæa; and there he tarried with them, and baptized. 23 And John also was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there ¹was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. 24 For John was not yet cast into prison. 25 There arose therefore a questioning on the part of John's disciples with a Jew about purifying. 26 And they came unto John, and said to him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond the Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him. 27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it have been given him from heaven. 28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but, that I am sent before him. 22 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, that standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is made full. 30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth, and of the earth he speaketh: ²he that cometh from heaven is above all. 32 What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness;

John 3
and no man re-
ceiveth his wit-

ness. 33 He that hath received his witness hath set his seal to *this*, that God is true. 34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for he giveth not the Spirit by measure. 35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. 36 He that believeth on the Son hath eternal life; but he that ¹obeyeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

¹Gr. *were many waters.*
of what he hath seen and heard.

²Some ancient authorities read *he that cometh from heaven beareth witness*
³Or, *believeth not.*

34. THE IMPRISONMENT OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Machærus

Matt. 14:3-5

3 For Herod had

laid hold on John,
and bound him, and
put him in prison for
the sake of Herodias,
his brother Philip's
wife.

Mark 6:17-20

17 For Herod
himself had

sent
forth and laid
hold upon John,
and bound him in
prison for the
sake of Herodias,
his brother
Philip's wife; for

Luke 3:19-20

19 but Herod the
tetrarch, being
reproved by him
for Herodias his
brother's wife,
and for all the
evil things which
Herod had done,
20 added this also
to them all, that
he

shut up John in
prison.

Matt. 14

4 For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

Mark 6

he had married her. 18 For John said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. 19 And Herodias set herself against him, and desired to kill him; and she could not; 20 for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a righteous and holy man, and kept him safe.

And when he heard him, he was much perplexed; and he heard him gladly.

¹Many ancient authorities read *did many things*.

35. CHRIST'S REASONS FOR LEAVING JUDÆA

Matt 4:12

Mark 1:14^a

14 Now after

12 And having heard* that

John was delivered up,

he withdrew into Galilee;

John was delivered up,

Jesus came into Galilee,

John 4:1-4,44

1 When therefore the Lord knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples than John 2 (although Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples),

3 he left Judæa, and departed again into Galilee. **44** For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honor in his own country. **4** And he must needs pass through Samaria.

* The standard text reads "Now when he heard". A slight departure has been made (incidentally a more literal translation of the Greek) in order to improve the reading of the composite narrative.

36. JESUS AND THE SAMARITAN WOMAN AT THE WELL

Sychar

John 4:5-43

5 So he cometh
to a city of
Samarita, called

Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph : 6 and Jacob's 'well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat 'thus by the 'well. It was about the sixth hour. 7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water : Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. 8 For his disciples were gone away into the city to buy food. 9 The Samaritan woman therefore saith unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, who am a Samaritan woman ? (For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans.) 10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink ; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. 11 The woman saith unto him, 'Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep : whence then hast thou that living water ? 12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his sons, and his cattle ? 13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one that drinketh of this water shall thirst again : 14 but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst ; but the water that I shall give him shall become in him a well of water springing up unto eternal life. 15 The woman saith unto him, 'Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come all the way hither to draw. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. 17 The woman answered and said unto him, I have no husband. Jesus saith unto her, Thou saidst well, I have no husband : 18 for thou hast had five husbands ; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband : this hast thou said truly. 19 The woman saith unto him, 'Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. 20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain ; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. 21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, shall ye worship the Father. 22 Ye worship that which ye know not : we worship that which we know ; for salvation is from the Jews. 23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship

John 4
the Father in
spirit and

truth: for such doth the Father seek to be his worshippers. 24 'God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and truth. 25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messiah cometh (he that is called Christ): when he is come, he will declare unto us all things. 26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*.

27 And upon this came his disciples: and they marvelled that he was speaking with a woman; yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why speakest thou with her? 28 So the woman left her waterpot, and went away into the city, and saith to the people, 29 Come, see a man, who told me all things that *ever* I did: can this be the Christ? 30 They went out of the city, and were coming to him. 31 In the mean while the disciples prayed him, saying, Rabbi, eat. 32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not. 33 The disciples therefore said one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat? 34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to accomplish his work. 35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and *then* cometh the harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields, that they are *white* already unto harvest. 36 He that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal; that he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together. 37 For herein is the saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. I sent you to reap that whereon ye have not labored: others have labored, and ye are entered into their labor.

39 And from that city many of the Samaritans believed on him because of the word of the woman, who testified, He told me all things that *ever* I did. 40 So when the Samaritans came unto him, they besought him to abide with them: and he abode there two days. 41 And many more believed because of his word; 42 and they said to the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy speaking: for we have heard for ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Saviour of the world.

43 And after the two days he went forth from thence into Galilee.

¹Gr. *spring*: and so in ver. 14; but not in ver. 11, 12.

²Or, as he was. Comp. ch. xiii. 25.

³Some ancient authorities omit *For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans.*

⁴Or, Lord.

⁵Or, or such

the Father also seeth.

⁶Or, God is spirit.

⁷Or, white unto harvest. Already he that reapeth &c.

PART VI

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

PROBABLY FROM THE AUTUMN OF A. D. 27 TO THE SPRING OF A. D. 29 *

37. CHRIST'S ARRIVAL AND RECEPTION IN GALILEE — A BRIEF SUMMARY OF HIS TEACHING

Matt. 4:17	Mark 1:14 ^b -15	Luke 4:14-15 14 And Jesus re- turned in the power of the Spirit into	John 4:45 45 So when he came into Galilee, the Gal- ileans received him, having seen all the things
	14 ^b Jesus came into Galilee,	Galilee:	

* This date is based upon the assumption that the feast of John 5:1 (sec. 48) was the passover of A. D. 28; or if not, that the passover of that year is not mentioned in the Gospels. If the passover referred to in John 6:4 (sec. 70) is regarded as that of A. D. 28, instead of A. D. 29, the large amount of material pertaining to this Great Galilean Ministry must be crowded into about six months. It seems better, therefore, to allot about eighteen months to this period.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 4	Mark 1	Luke 4	John 4 that he did in Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.
17 From that time began Jesus	to preach, and to say, Repent ye; for the kingdom of hea- ven is at hand.	preaching the 'gospel of God, 15 and saying, The time is ful- filled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: re- pent ye, and believe in the 'gospel.	and a fame went out concerning him through all the region round about. 15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

¹Or, *good tidings*: and so elsewhere.

38. THE HEALING AT CANA OF THE CAPERNAUM NOBLEMAN'S SON

John 4:46-54
**46 He came
therefore again
unto Cana of**

John 4
Galilee, where he
made the water

wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. 47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judæa into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son; for he was at the point of death. 48 Jesus therefore said unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will in no wise believe. 49 The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die. 50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. The man believed the word that Jesus spake unto him, and he went his way. 51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, saying, that his son lived. 52 So he inquired of them the hour when he began to amend. They said therefore unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. 53 So the father knew that it was at that hour in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole house. 54 This is again the second sign that Jesus did, having come out of Judæa into Galilee.

¹Or, king's officer. ²Or, Lord. ³Gr. bondservants.

39. THE FIRST REJECTION AT NAZARETH

Luke 4:16-30

16 And he came
to Nazareth,
where he had

been brought up: and he entered, as his custom was, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read. 17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the book, and found the place where it was written,

18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,
Because he anointed me to preach good tidings to the poor:
He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives,
And recovering of sight to the blind,
To set at liberty them that are bruised,

19 To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord [Is. 61:1-2].

Luke 4
20 And he closed
the ²book, and

gave it back to the attendant, and sat down: and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled in your ears. 22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth: and they said, Is not this Joseph's son? 23 And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this parable, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country. 24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is acceptable in his own country. 25 But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there came a great famine over all the land; 26 and unto none of them was Elijah sent, but only to ²Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. 27 And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian. 28 And they were all filled with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things; 29 and they rose up, and cast him forth out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might throw him down headlong. 30 But he passing through the midst of them went his way.

¹Or, a roll. ²Or, roll. ³Or, Wherefore. ⁴Or, the gospel. ⁵Gr. Sarepta.

40. THE NEW HOME IN CAPERNAUM

Matt. 4:13-16
13 and leaving
Nazareth, he
came and dwelt
in Capernaum,

which is by the
sea, in the borders

Luke 4:31a

31 And he came
down to Capernaum,

a city of Galilee.

Matt. 4
of Zebulun and
Naphtali : 14 that

it might be fulfilled which was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying,

15 The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,
'Toward the sea, beyond the Jordan,
Galilee of the 'Gentiles,

16 The people that sat in darkness
Saw a great light,
And to them that sat in the region and shadow of death,
To them did light spring up [Is. 9:1-2].

¹Gr. *The way of the sea.* ²Gr. *nations* : and so elsewhere.

41. THE GREAT CATCH OF FISHES AND THE CALL OF THE FOUR FISHERMEN

The Sea of Galilee

Matt. 4:18-22

Mark 1:16-20

Luke 5:1-11

18 And walking by
the sea of Galilee,
he saw two brethren,

16 And passing a-
long by the sea of
Galilee, he saw Simon

1 Now it came
to pass, while
the multitude
pressed upon him
and heard the
word of God, that
he was standing
by the lake of
Gennesaret; 2
and he saw two
boats standing
by the lake: but
the fishermen had
gone out of them,
and

Simon who is
called Peter,

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 4	Mark 1	
and Andrew his brother,	and Andrew the brother of Simon	
casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers.	casting a net in the sea; for they were fishers.	were washing their nets.
		3 And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from

the land. And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat. 4 And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. 5 And Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets. 6 And when they had done this, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their nets were breaking; 7 and they beckoned unto their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink. 8 But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. 9 For he was amazed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken; 10 and so were also James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from

		henceforth thou shalt ² catch men.
	17 And	11 And when they had brought their boats to land,
	Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. 18 And straightway they	
19 And he saith unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you fishers of men.		
20 And they straight-		

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 4	Mark 1	Luke 5
way left the nets, and followed him.	left the nets, and followed him.	
21 And going on from thence	19 And going on a little further, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother,	
he saw two other brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother,	who also were in the boat mending the nets. 20 And	
in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets ; and	straightway he called them : and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after him.	
he called them. 22 And they straightway left the boat and their father, and followed him.		they left all, and followed him.

¹Or, Jacob. ²Gr, take alive.

42. A BUSY SABBATH — THE HEALING OF A DEMONIAK, PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW AND MANY OTHERS

Capernaum

Matt. 8:14-17	Mark 1:21-34	Luke 4:31b-41
	21 And they go into Capernaum ; and straightway on the Sabbath day he entered into the syna-	

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Mark 1

**gogue and taught.
22 And they
were astonished
at his teaching:
for he taught
them as having
authority, and
not as the scribes.**

23 And straightway
there was in their
synagogue a man
with an unclean
spirit; and he cried
out, 24 saying, What
have we to do with
thee, Jesus thou
Nazarene? art thou
come to destroy us?
I know thee who
thou art, the Holy
One of God. 25 And
Jesus rebuked ²him,
saying, Hold thy
peace, and come out
of him. 26 And

**the
unclean spirit,
'tearing him and**

Luke 4

31b And he was
teaching them on
the sabbath day:
32 and they
were astonished
at his teaching;
for his word was
with authority.

**33 And in the
synagogue there
was a man, that
had a spirit
of an unclean
demon; and he
cried out with a
loud voice, 34
'Ah! what have
we to do with
thee, Jesus thou
Nazarene? art
thou come to
destroy us? I
know thee who
thou art, the
Holy One of God.
35 And Jesus
rebuked him,
saying, Hold thy
peace, and come
out of him. And
when the demon
had thrown him
down in the
midst,**

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8

Mark 1

Luke 4

crying with a loud voice, came

out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What is this? a new teaching!

with authority he commandeth even the unclean spirits,

and they obey him.

28 And the report of him went out straightway everywhere into all the region of Galilee round about. 29 And straightway, when they were come out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 Now Simon's wife's mother

he came

out of him, having done him no hurt.

36 And amazement came upon all, and they spake together, one with another, saying, What is this word?

for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits,

and they come out.

37 And there went forth a rumor concerning him into every place of the region round about.

38 And he rose up from the synagogue, and entered into the house of Simon.

And Simon's wife's mother

14 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8	Mark 1	Luke 4
<p>lying sick of a fever.</p>	<p>lay sick of a fever; and straightway they tell him of her: 31 and he</p>	<p>was holden with a great fever; and they besought him for her. 39</p>
	<p>came and</p>	<p>And he</p>
		<p>stood over her, and re- buked the fever; and</p>
<p>15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she arose, and minis- tered unto him. 16</p>	<p>took her by the hand, and raised her up; and the fever left her,</p>	<p>it left her: and immediately she rose up and ministered unto them.</p>
<p>And when even was come,</p>	<p>32 And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were sick, and</p>	<p>40 And when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. 41</p>
		<p>And</p>
<p>they brought unto him</p>		
<p>many ⁷possessed with demons: and</p>	<p>them that were ⁷possessed with demons. 33 And all the city was gathered together</p>	

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8	Mark 1	Luke 4
<p>he cast out the spirits</p> <p>with a word</p> <p>and healed all that were sick:</p> <p>17 that it might be fulfilled which was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our diseases [Is. 53:4].</p>	<p>at the door. 34</p> <p>And</p> <p>he healed many that were sick with divers diseases, and cast out many demons; and he suffered not the demons to speak, because they knew him^a.</p>	<p>[the] demons also came out from many,</p> <p>crying out, and saying, Thou art the Son of God. And rebuking them, he suffered them not to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.</p>

¹Or, Let alone.

²Or, it.

³Or, convulsing.

⁴Or, this word, that with authority ... come out?

⁵Some ancient authorities read when he was come out of the synagogue, he came &c.

⁶Or, Jacob.

⁷Or,

demoniacs. ⁸Many ancient authorities add to be Christ. See Lk. 4:41.

43. THE FIRST TOUR OF GALILEE WITH THE FOUR FISHERMEN

Matt. 4:23-25

Mark 1:35-39

Luke 4:42-44

35 And in the morning, a great while before day,

42 And when it was day,

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 4

Mark 1

Luke 4

he rose up and went out, and departed into a desert place, and there prayed. 36 And Simon and

he came out and went into a desert place: and

they that were with him followed after him; 37 and they found him, and say unto him, All are seeking thee. 38 And he saith unto them, Let us go

elsewhere into the next towns, that I may preach there also; for to this end came I forth. 39 And

the multitudes sought after him, and came unto him, and would

have stayed him, that he should not go from them. 43 But he said unto them, I must preach 'the good tidings of the kingdom of God to the other

cities also: for therefore was I sent.

23 And 'Jesus went about in all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the 'gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness among the people.

he went into their synagogues throughout all Galilee, preaching

44 And he was preaching in the synagogues of 'Galilee.

and casting out demons.

Matt. 4
24 And the report
of him went forth

into all Syria: and they brought unto him all that were sick, holden with divers diseases and torments, ⁵possessed with demons, and epileptic, and palsied; and he healed them. 25 And there followed him great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judæa and from beyond the Jordan.

¹Or, the gospel.
Judæa.

²Some ancient authorities read *he*.

⁴Or, good tidings: and so elsewhere.

³Very many ancient authorities read

⁵Or, *demoniacs*.

44. HEALING A LEPER

A city in Galilee

Matt. 8:2-4

2 And behold,
there came to
him a leper

and
worshipped him,

saying, Lord, if thou
wilt, thou canst
make me clean.

3 And he stretched
forth

Mark 1:40-45

40 And there com-
eth to him a leper,
beseeching him,
'and kneeling down

to him, and saying
unto him, If thou
wilt, thou canst make
me clean.

41 And
being moved with
compassion, he
stretched forth

Luke 5:12-16

12 And it came
to pass, while he
was in one of the
cities, behold, a
man full of lep-
rosy: and when
he saw Jesus,
he fell on his
face,

and besought
him, saying, Lord,
if thou wilt, thou
canst make me
clean.

13 And he
stretched forth his

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8	Mark 1	Luke 5
<p>his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway his leprosy was cleansed.</p> <p>4 And Jesus saith unto him, ²See thou tell no man; but go, show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.</p>	<p>his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou made clean.</p> <p>42 And straightway the leprosy departed from him, and he was made clean. 43 And he ²strictly charged him, and straightway sent him out, 44 and saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing the things which Moses ²commanded, for a testimony unto them.</p> <p>45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to spread abroad the ²matter, in-somuch that ²Jesus could no more openly enter into ²a city, but was without</p>	<p>hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou made clean.</p> <p>And straightway the leprosy departed from him. 14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go thy way, and show thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, ²according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. 15 But so much the more went abroad the report concerning him:</p>

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8

Mark 1

Luke 5

in desert places :

and they came to him

from every quarter.

and great multitudes came together

to hear, and to be healed of their infirmities. 16 But he withdrew himself in the deserts, and prayed.

¹Some ancient authorities omit *and kneeling down to him.*

²Or, *sternly.*

³Lev. xiii. 49; xiv. 2 ff.

⁴Gr. *word.*

⁵Gr. *he.*

⁶Or, *the city.*

45. HEALING THE PARALYTIC LOWERED THROUGH THE ROOF

Capernaum

Matt. 9:2-8

Mark 2:1-12

Luke 5:17-26

1 And when he entered again into Capernaum after some days,

17 And

it came to pass on one of those days, that he was teaching; and

it was noised that he was 'in the house. 2 And many were gathered together, so that there was

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
	no longer room for them, no, not even about the door: and	
	he spake the word unto them. 3 And	there were Phari- sees and doctors of the law sitting by, who were come out of every village of Galilee and Judæa and Jerusalem: and
2 And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, ly- ing on a bed:	they come, bringing unto him	the power of the Lord was with him to heal. 18 And behold,
	a man sick of the palsy, borne of four. 4 And	men bring on a bed
	when they could not come	a man that was palsied: and
	nigh unto him	they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him. 19 And not finding by what way they might bring him in
	for the crowd, they	because of the multitude, they went up to the housetop, and

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
	uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they	
	let down the "bed whereon the sick of the palsy lay.	let him down through the tiles with his couch into the midst before Jesus.
	5 And Jesus seeing their faith saith unto the sick of the palsy,	
and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy,	'Son, thy sins are forgiven.	20 And seeing their faith, he said, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.
'Son, be of good cheer; thy sins are forgiven.	6 But there were certain of the scribes	
3 And behold, certain of the scribes	sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, 7 Why doth this man thus speak? he blasphemeth: who can forgive sins but one, even God? 8 And straightway Jesus, perceiving in his spirit that they so reasoned	21 And the scribes and the Pharisees
said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.		began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone? 22 But Jesus perceiving their "rea-
4 And Jesus "know- ing their thoughts		

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
said, Wherefore think ye	within themselves, saith unto them, Why reason ye these	sonings, answered and said unto them,
evil	things in your hearts?	^a Why reason ye in your hearts? 23
in your hearts? 5	9 Which is easier, to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and take up thy 'bed, and walk?	Which is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Arise and walk?
For which is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and walk? 6	10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy), 11 I say unto thee, Arise, take up thy 'bed, and go unto thy house. 12 And he arose, and straightway took up the 'bed, and went forth before them all;	24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority on earth to forgive sins (he said unto him that was palsied), I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thy house. 25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay,
But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority on earth to forgive sins (then saith he to the sick of the palsy), Arise, and take up thy bed, and go unto thy house. 7 And he arose, and departed to his house.	insomuch that	and departed to his house, glorifying God.
8 But when the multitudes saw it,	they were all	

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
they were afraid, and glorified God, who had given such authority unto men.	amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.	26 And amazement took hold on all, and they glorified God; and they were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

¹Or, at home. ²Gr. that he should heal. Many ancient authorities read that he should heal them.
³Many ancient authorities read bring him unto him. ⁴Or, pallet. ⁵Gr. Child. ⁶Many ancient authorities read seeing. ⁷Or, questionings. ⁸Or, What.

46. THE CALL OF MATTHEW LEVI

Capernaum

Matt. 9:9	Mark 2:13-14	Luke 5:27-28
9 And as Jesus passed by from thence, he	13 And he went forth again by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.	27 And after these things he went forth, and
	14 And as he passed by, he saw	

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
saw a man,		beheld a publi-
called		can,
Matthew,	Levi the son	
sitting at	of Alphæus	named Levi,
the place of toll:	sitting at the	sitting at the place
and he saith unto	place of toll, and	of toll, and said unto
him, Follow me.	he saith unto	him, Follow me.
	him, Follow me.	
And he arose, and	And he arose and	28 And he for-
followed him.	followed him.	sook all, and rose
		up and followed
		him.

47. AT MATTHEW'S FEAST JESUS DEFENDS HIS EATING WITH PUBLICANS AND SINNERS AND EXPLAINS HIS DISCIPLES' NEGLECT OF FASTING

Capernaum

Matt. 9:10-17	Mark 2:15-22	Luke 5:29-39
10 And it came to	15 And it came	29 And
pass, as he 'sat at	to pass, that	
meat in the house,	he was sitting at	Levi made
behold, many ² publi-	meat in his house,	him a great feast
cans and sinners	and many	in his house: and
came and sat	² publi-	there was a great
down with Jesus	cans and sinners	multitude of
and his disciples.	sat down	² pub-
	with	licans and of others
	Jesus and his	that were sitting
	disciples: for	at meat
	there were	with them.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
	many, and they followed him.	
11 And when the	16 And the scribes ⁴ of the Pharisees,	30 And ¹the Pharisees and their scribes murmured
Pharisees saw it,	when they saw that he was eating with the sinners and	
they said unto his	²publicans,	a- gainst his disciples,
disciples, Why eat-	said	saying,
eth	unto his disciples, ¹How is it that	Why do
your Teacher	he eateth ⁶ and	
with the ² publicans and sinners? 12 But	drinketh with ² publicans and sinners?	ye eat and drink with the ²publicans and sinners?
when he heard it, he said, They that	17 And when Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that	31 And Jesus
are ⁷ whole have no need of a physician,	are ⁷whole have no need of a physician, but	answering said unto them, They that are
but they that are sick.	they that are sick:	⁸ in health have no need of a physician; but they that are sick.
13 But go ye and learn what <i>this</i> mean-		
eth, I desire mer-		
cy, and not sacrifice [Hos. 6:6]: for		
I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.	I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.	32 I am not come to call the righteous but sinners to re- pentance.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
<p>14 Then come to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?</p>	<p>18 And John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting:</p> <p>and they come and say unto him, Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast,</p> <p>but thy disciples fast not?</p>	<p>33 And they said unto him, The disciples of John fast often, and make supplications;</p>
<p>15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the ¹⁰sons of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them?</p> <p>but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast.</p>	<p>19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the ¹⁰sons of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?</p> <p>as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.</p> <p>20 But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast in that day.</p>	<p>likewise also the <i>disciples</i> of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink. 34 And Jesus said unto them, Can ye make the ¹⁰sons of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? 35 But the days will come; and when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, then will they fast in those days.</p> <p>36 And he spake also a parable un-</p>

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 9	Mark 2	Luke 5
16 And no	21 No man seweth a piece	to them: No man rendeth a piece
man putteth a piece	of undressed cloth	
of undressed cloth		from a new garment and putteth it upon
upon an old garment;	on an old garment: else	an old garment; else he will rend
for that which should		the new, and
fill it up taketh from		also
the garment, and a	that which should fill it up taketh from	
worse rent is made. 17	it, the new from the old, and	
Neither do <i>men</i> put	a worse rent is made. 22 And	
new wine into old		the piece
"wine-skins: else the		from the new will not agree with
skins burst, and the	no man putteth new wine into old	the old. 37 And no man putteth
wine is spilled, and	"wine-skins; else the	new wine into old
the skins perish:	wine will burst the skins, and the wine	"wine-skins; else the new wine will
but they put new	perisheth, and the skins: but	burst the skins, and itself will be
wine into		spilled, and the skins will perish.
	they put new wine into	38 But
	fresh wine-skins.	the new
fresh wine-skins, and both are preserved.		wine must be put in to fresh wine-skins.

Luke 5
39 And no man
having drunk old
wine desireth
new; for he saith,
The old is ¹²good.

¹Gr. *reclined* : and so always. ²That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*. ³Or, *the Pharisees and the scribes among them*. ⁴Some ancient authorities read *and the Pharisees*. ⁵Or, *He eateth . sinners*.
⁶Some ancient authorities omit *and drinketh*. ⁷Gr. *strong*. ⁸Gr. *sound*. ⁹Some ancient authorities omit *oft*. ¹⁰That is, *companions of the bridegroom*. ¹¹That is, *skins used as bottles*. ¹²Many ancient authorities read *better*.

48. HEALING THE MAN AT THE POOL OF BETHESDA — A SABBATH CONTROVERSY

Jerusalem. Probably the Passover, A. D. 28

John 5
1 After these
things there was
'a feast of the

Jews ; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 2 Now there is in Jerusalem by the sheep *gate* a pool, which is called in Hebrew 'Bethesda, having five porches. 3 In these lay a multitude of them that were sick, blind, halt, withered'. 5 And a certain man was there, who had been thirty and eight years in his infirmity. 6 When Jesus saw him lying, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wouldest thou be made whole ? 7 The sick man answered him, 'Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool : but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. 8 Jesus saith unto him, Arise, take up thy 'bed, and walk. 9 And straightway the man was made whole, and took up his 'bed and walked.

Now it was the sabbath on that day. 10 So the Jews said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath, and it is not lawful for thee to take up thy 'bed. 11 But he answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy 'bed, and walk. 12 They asked him, Who is the man that said unto thee, Take up *thy 'bed*, and walk ? 13 But he that was healed knew not who it was ; for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in the place. 14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him,

no more, lest a worse thing befall thee. 15 The man went away, and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had made him whole. 16 And for this cause the Jews persecuted Jesus, because he did these things on the sabbath. 17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh even until now, and I work. 18 For this cause therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only brake the sabbath, but also called God his own Father, making himself equal with God.

19 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father doing: for what things soever he doeth, these the Son also doeth in like manner. 20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and greater works than these will he show him, that ye may marvel. 21 For as the Father raiseth the dead and giveth them life, even so the Son also giveth life to whom he will. 22 For neither doth the Father judge any man, but he hath given all judgment unto the Son; 23 that all may honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He that honoreth not the Son honoreth not the Father that sent him. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth him that sent me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into judgment, but hath passed out of death into life. 25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour cometh, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live. 26 For as the Father hath life in himself, even so gave he to the Son also to have life in himself: 27 and he gave him authority to execute judgment, because he is a son of man. 28 Marvel not at this: for the hour cometh, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, 29 and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of judgment.

30 I can of myself do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is righteous; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. 32 It is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. 33 Ye have sent unto John, and he hath borne witness unto the truth. 34 But the witness which I receive is not from man: howbeit I say these things, that ye may be saved. 35 He was the lamp that burneth and shineth; and ye were willing to rejoice for a season in his

John 5
light. 36 But the
witness which

I have is greater than *that of John*; for the works which the Father hath given me to accomplish, the very works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. 37 And the Father that sent me, he hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his form. 38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he sent, him ye believe not. 39 Ye search the scriptures, because ye think that in them ye have eternal life; and these are they which bear witness of me; 40 and ye will not come to me, that ye may have life. 41 I receive not glory from men. 42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in yourselves. 43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. 44 How can ye believe, who receive glory one of another, and the glory that *cometh* from 'the only God ye seek not? 45 Think not that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, *even Moses*, on whom ye have set your hope. 46 For if ye believed Moses, ye would believe me; for he wrote of me. 47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

¹Many ancient authorities read *the feast* (Comp. ch. ii, 13 ?). ²Some ancient authorities read *Bethsaida*, others *Bethzatha*. ³Many ancient authorities insert, wholly or in part, *waiting for the moving of the water: 4 for an angel of the Lord went down at certain seasons into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole, with whatsoever disease he was holden.* ⁴Or, *Lord*. ⁵Or, *pallet*. ⁶Or, *hearken*. ⁷Or, *practised*. ⁸Or, *Search the scriptures*. ⁹Some ancient authorities read *the only one*.

49. THE DISCIPLES PLUCKING GRAIN— ANOTHER SABBATH CONTROVERSY

Matt. 12:1-8	Mark 2:23-28	Luke 6:1-5
1 At that season	23 And	
	it came to pass, that	
Jesus	he	1 Now it came to pass
went on the sabbath day	was going on the sabbath day	on a 'sabbath, that he was going

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 12	Mark 2	Luke 6
through the grainfields;	through the grain- fields;	through the grainfields;
and his disciples were hungry and	and his disciples ² began,	and his disciples
began to pluck ears	as they went,	plucked the ears,
and to eat. ² But the	to pluck the ears. ²⁴	and did eat,
Pharisees,	And	rubbing them
when	the Pharisees	2 But certain
they saw it, said	said unto him, Be-	of
unto him,* Be-	hold, why do they	the Pharisees
hold, thy disciples	on the sabbath day	said, Why do ye
do that which it	that which is not	that which it is
is not lawful to do	lawful?	not lawful to do
upon the sabbath.	25 And he	on the sabbath day?
3 But he said unto	said unto them, ³ Did	3 And Jesus an-
them, ³ Have ye not	ye never read what	swering them
read what David did,	David did,	said, 'Have ye
when he was hungry,	when	not read even
and they that were	he had need, and	this, what David
with him; ⁴ how	was hungry, he,	did,
he entered into	and they that were	when he was
the house of God,	with him? ²⁶ How	hungry, he, and they
and ³ ate the show-	he entered into	that were with him;
bread,	the house of God	4 how he entered
	'when Abiathar	into the house of
	was high priest,	God, and took and
	and ate the show-	ate the showbread,
	bread,	

* Note that according to Luke's account (6:2), the Pharisees also addressed the disciples directly.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 12	Mark 2	Luke 6
<p>which it was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them that were with him, but only for the priests?</p>	<p>which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests, and gave also to them that were with him?</p>	<p>and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests alone?</p>
<p>5 Or have ye not read in the law, 'that on the sabbath day the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are guiltless? 6 But I say unto you, that 'one greater than the temple is here. 7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, I desire mercy, and not sacrifice [Hos. 6:6], ye would not have condemned the guiltless.</p>	<p>27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: 28 so that the Son of man is lord even of the sabbath.</p>	<p>5 And he said unto them, The Son of man is lord of the sabbath.</p>
<p>8 For the Son of man is lord of the sabbath.</p>		

¹Many ancient authorities insert *second-first*. ²Gr. *began to make their way plucking*. ³I S. xxi, 6. ⁴Some ancient authorities read *in the days of Abiathar the high priest*. ⁵Some ancient authorities read *they ate*. ⁶Num. xxviii, 9, 10. ⁷Gr. *a greater thing*.

50. HEALING THE MAN WITH THE WITHERED HAND — ANOTHER SABBATH CONTROVERSY

A synagogue in Galilee

Matt. 12:9-15a

9 And he departed thence, and went into their synagogue: 10 and behold, a man having a withered hand. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day? that they might accuse him. 11 And

he said unto them, What man shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep, and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? 12 How much then is a man of more value than a sheep!

Mark 3:1-6

1 And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there who had his hand withered. 2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man that had his hand withered,

Luke 6:6-11

6 And it came to pass on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man there, and his right hand was withered. 7 And the scribes and the Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath; that they might find how to accuse him. 8 But he knew their thoughts; and

he said to the man that had his hand withered,

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 12	Mark 3	Luke 6
	'Stand forth.	Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. 9
Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day.	4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful on the sabbath day to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to kill?	And Jesus said unto them, I ask you, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to destroy it?
	But they held their peace. 5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved at the hardening of their heart, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and his hand was	10 And he looked round about on them all, and said unto him, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored.
13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was		
re- stored whole, as the other.	restored.	11 But they were filled with ² madness; and communed one with another what they

Matt. 12	Mark 3	Luke 6
14 But the Pharisees went out, and took counsel against him, how they might destroy him.	6 And the Pharisees went out, and straightway with the Herodians took counsel against him, how they might destroy him.	might do to Jesus.
15 And Jesus perceiving it withdrew from thence :		

¹Gr. *Arise into the midst.* ²Or, *foolishness.*

51. JESUS HEALS GREAT MULTITUDES BY THE SEA OF GALILEE

Matt. 12:15b-21

Mark 3:7-12

15b and many followed him ;

7 And Jesus with his disciples withdrew to the sea : and a great multitude from Galilee followed ; and from Judæa, 8 and from Jerusalem, and from

Idumæa, and beyond the Jordan, and about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, hearing what great things he did, came unto him. 9 And he spake to his disciples, that a little boat should wait on him because of the crowd, lest they should throng him : 10 for he had healed many ; insomuch that as many as had 'plagues 'pressed upon him that they might touch him.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

<p>Matt. 12 and he healed them all,</p>	<p>Mark 3</p>		
<p>16 and charged them</p>	<p>11 And the un- clean spirits, whosoever they beheld him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. 12 And he charged them much</p>		
<p>that they should not make him known: 17 that it might be fulfilled which</p>	<p>that they should not make him known.</p>		
<p>was spoken through Isaiah the prophet, saying,</p>			
<p>18 Behold, my 'servant whom I have chosen ; My beloved in whom my soul is well pleased : I will put my Spirit upon him, And he shall declare judgment to the Gentiles.</p>			
<p>19 He shall not strive, nor cry aloud ; Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.</p>			
<p>20 A bruised reed shall he not break, And smoking flax shall he not quench, Till he send forth judgment unto victory.</p>			
<p>21 And in his name shall the Gentiles hope [Is. 42:1-4].</p>			

¹Or, all the things that he did.
Is. lii. 13; liii. 11.

²Gr. scourges.

³Gr. fell.

⁴Or, child. See Acts iii. 13;

52. JESUS SELECTS THE TWELVE APOSTLES

Matt. 10:2-4

Mark 3:13-19a

Luke 6:12-16

13 And he goeth up
into the mountain,
and calleth unto
him whom he him-
self would;

and
they went unto
him. 14 And he
appointed twelve,'

that they might
be with him, and
that he might
send them forth
to preach, 15 and
to have author-
ity to cast out
demons:

2 Now the names
of the twelve
apostles are
these: The first,

Simon

16 'and

12 And it came
to pass in these
days, that he
went out into
the mountain to
pray; and he
continued all
night in prayer
to God. 13 And
when it was day,
he called his dis-
ciples;

and he
chose from them
twelve, whom
also he named
apostles:

14 Simon'

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 10	Mark 3	Luke 6
Simon, who is called Peter,	he	whom he also
and Andrew his brother;	sur-named Peter;	named Peter, and
¹ James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother;	17 and ¹ James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of ¹ James; and them he surnamed Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder:	Andrew his brother, and ² James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew,
3 Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; ³ James the son of Alphæus, and	18 and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and ³ James, the son of Alphæus, and	15 and Matthew
Thaddæus; 4 Simon	Thaddæus* and Simon the Cananæan,	Alphæus, and Simon
the Cananæan, and	19 and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.	who was called the Zealot,
Judas Iscariot, who also ⁶ betrayed him.		¹⁶ and Judas the ² son of ³ James, and Judas Iscariot, who became a traitor;

¹Some ancient authorities add *whom also he named apostles*. See Luke vi.13; comp. ch. vi.30.

²Some ancient authorities insert *and he appointed twelve*. ³Or, *Jacob*. ⁴Or, *Zealot*. See Luke vi.15; Acts i.13. ⁵Or, *brother*. ⁶Or, *delivered him up*.

*In Luke's list of names, this apostle is called "Judas the son (or brother) of James". Thaddæus was probably his surname.

53. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT

Matt. 5:1-8:1

1 And seeing the multitudes, he went up into the mountain: and when he had sat down, his disciples came unto him:

2 and he

opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6 Blessed are they that hunger and

Luke 6:17-49

17 and he came down with them, and stood on a level place, and a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judæa and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, who came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; 18 and they that were troubled with unclean spirits were healed. 19 And all the multitude sought to touch him; for power came forth from him, and healed *them* all.

20 And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and

said, Blessed *are* ye

poor: for yours is the kingdom of

God. 21 Blessed *are* ye that hunger now:

for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are* ye

that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 5
 thirst after right-
 eousness : for
 they shall be filled.
 7 Blessed are the merciful: for
 they shall obtain mercy.
 8 Blessed are the pure in heart:
 for they shall see God.
 9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for
 they shall be called sons of God.
 10 Blessed are they that have been
 persecuted for righteousness'
 sake: for theirs is the kingdom
 of heaven.

11 Blessed are ye

when *men* shall reproach you,

and
 persecute you, and say all manner of
 evil against you falsely,

Rejoice, for my sake. 12
 and be exceeding glad:

for great
 is your reward in heaven: for so

persecuted
 they
 the prophets that were before you.

Luke 6

22 Blessed are ye,
 when men shall
 hate you, and when they shall sepa-
 rate you *from their company*, and
 reproach you, and cast out your name
 as evil,

for the Son of man's sake. 23
 Rejoice in that day, and leap *for joy*:

for behold, your reward is great in
 heaven; for in the same manner

did
 their fathers
 unto the prophets.

24 But woe unto you that are rich! for
 ye have received your consolation.

25 Woe unto you, ye that are full now!
 for ye shall hunger. Woe *unto you*,
 ye that laugh now! for ye shall
 mourn and weep. 26 Woe *unto you*,
 when all men shall speak well of you!
 for in the same manner did their

Matt. 5

Luke 6

fathers to the false prophets.

13 Ye are the salt of the earth : but

if the salt have lost its savor, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do *men* light a lamp, and put it under the bushel, but on the stand ; and it shineth unto all that are in the house. 16 Even so let your light shine before men ; that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.

17 Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets : I came not to destroy, but to fulfil. 18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass away from the law, till all things be accomplished. 19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven : but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 20 For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not kill [Ex. 20:13; Dt. 5:17] ; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment : 22 but I say unto you, that every one who is angry with his brother 'shall be in danger of the judgment ; and whosoever shall say to his brother, 'Raca, shall be in danger of the council ; and whosoever shall say, 'Thou fool, shall be in danger 'of the 'hell of fire. 23 If therefore thou art offering thy gift at the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, 24 leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art with him in the way ; lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge 'deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the last farthing.

27 Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt not commit adultery [Ex. 20:14; Dt. 5:18] : 28 but I say unto you, that every one that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29 And if thy right eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and

Matt. 5

Luke 6

cast it from thee:
for it is profitable

for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body be cast into 'hell. 30 And if thy right hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body go into 'hell. 31 It was said also, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement [Dt. 24:1,3]: 32 but I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress: and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away committeth adultery.

33 Again, ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths [Lev. 19:12; Num. 30:2; Dt. 23:21]: 34 but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by the heaven, for it is the throne of God; 35 nor by the earth, for it is the footstool of his feet; nor 'by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. 36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black. 37 "But let your speech be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: and whatsoever is more than these is of "the evil one.

38 Ye have heard that it was said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth [Ex. 21:24; Lev. 24:20; Dt. 19:21]: 39 but I say unto you, Resist not "him that is evil: but whosoever smiteth thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. 40 And if any man would go to law with thee, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. 41 And whosoever shall "compel thee to go one mile, go with him two.

42 Give to him that asketh thee,

and
from him that would borrow of thee
turn not thou away.

43 Ye have heard that it was said,
Thou shalt love thy neighbor [Lev. 19:18],

29 To him that
smiteth thee on the
one cheek offer also

the other; and from him that taketh away
thy cloak withhold not thy coat also.

30 Give to every one that asketh
thee;

and of him that taketh away
thy goods ask them not again.

Matt. 5
and hate thine
enemy: 44 but I

say unto you, Love your enemies,
and pray for them that persecute

you;
45 that ye may be sons of your
Father who is in heaven: for he
maketh his sun to rise on the evil
and the good, and sendeth rain on
the just and the unjust. 46 For if ye
love them that love you, what reward
have ye? do not even the "publicans
the same?

47 And if ye salute your
brethren only, what do ye more
than others? do not even the
Gentiles the same?

48 Ye therefore
shall be perfect, as your heavenly
Father is perfect.

Luke 6

27 But I

say unto you that
hear, Love your
enemies, do good to them that hate
you, 28 bless them that curse you,
pray for them that despitefully
use

you.

32 And if ye love them
that love you, what thank have ye?

for even sinners love those that love
them. 33 And if ye do good to them
that do good to you, what thank
have ye? for even sinners do the
same. 34 And if ye lend to them of
whom ye hope to receive, what
thank have ye? even sinners lend
to sinners, to receive again as much.

35 But love your enemies, and do
them good, and lend, "never des-
pairing; and your reward shall be
great, and ye shall be sons of the
Most High: for he is kind toward the
unthankful and evil.

Matt. 6

1 Take heed that
ye do not your

righteousness before men, to be seen of them : else ye have no reward with your Father who is in heaven.

2 When therefore thou doest alms, sound not a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth : 4 that thine alms may be in secret : and thy Father who seeth in secret shall recompense thee.

5 And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites : for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thine inner chamber, and having shut thy door, pray to thy Father who is in secret, and thy Father who seeth in secret shall recompense thee. 7 And in praying use not vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do : for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. 8 Be not therefore like unto them : for "your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. 9 After this manner therefore pray ye : Our Father who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth. 11 Give us this day "our daily bread. 12 And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. 13 And bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from "the evil one." 14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. 15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance : for they disfigure their faces, that they may be seen of men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face ; 18 that thou be not seen of men to fast, but of thy Father who is in secret : and thy Father, who seeth in secret, shall recompense thee.

19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust consume, and where thieves "break through and steal : 20 but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth consume, and where thieves do not "break through nor steal : 21 for

Matt. 6-7
where thy treasure is, there will

Luke 6

thy heart be also. 22 The lamp of the body is the eye : if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. 23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is the darkness ! 24 No man can serve two masters : for either he will hate the one, and love the other ; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. 25 Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink ; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the raiment ? 26 Behold the birds of the heaven, that they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns ; and your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are not ye of much more value than they ? 27 And which of you by being anxious can add one cubit unto the measure of his life ? 28 And why are ye anxious concerning raiment ? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow ; they toil not, neither do they spin : 29 yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30 But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith ? 31 Be not therefore anxious, saying, What shall we eat ? or, What shall we drink ? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed ? 32 For after all these things do the Gentiles seek ; for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33 But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness ; and all these things shall be added unto you. 34 Be not therefore anxious for the morrow : for the morrow will be anxious for itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

I Judge not, that ye be not judged.

36 Be ye merciful, even as your Father is merciful. 37 And judge not, and ye shall not be judged : and condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned : release, and ye shall be released : 38 give, and it shall be given unto you ; good measure, pressed down, shaken to-

Matt. 7

2 For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured unto you.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me cast out the mote out of thine eye; and lo, the beam is in thine own eye? 5 Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest haply they trample them under their feet, and turn and rend you.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: 8 for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. 9 Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him for a loaf, will give him a stone; 10 or if he shall ask for a fish, will give him a serpent? 11 If

Luke 6

gether, running over, shall they give into your bosom.

For with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to

you again.

39 And he spake also a parable unto them, Can the blind guide the blind? shall they not both fall into a pit? 40 The disciple is not above his teacher: but every one when he is perfected shall be as his teacher. 41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 42 Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me cast out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

Matt. 7
ye then, being
evil, know how to
give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your Father
who is in heaven give good things to
them that ask him? 12 All things
therefore whatsoever ye would that
men should do unto you, even so do
ye also unto them: for this is the law
and the prophets.

13 Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide ^{is} the gate, and broad is
the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many are they that enter in
thereby. 14 ^{For} narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth
unto life, and few are they that find it.

15 Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but
inwardly are ravening wolves. 16 By their fruits ye shall know them. Do *men*
gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17 Even so every good tree bringeth
forth good fruit; but the corrupt tree
bringeth forth evil fruit. 18 A good
tree cannot bring forth evil fruit,
neither can a corrupt tree bring forth
good fruit. 19 Every tree that bring-
eth not forth good fruit is hewn
down, and cast into the fire.

20 There-
fore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Luke 6

31 And as ye would
that men should do
to you, do ye also to them likewise.

43 For there is no
good tree that bring-
eth forth corrupt fruit; nor again a
corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit.

44 For each tree is known by its own
fruit. For of thorns men do not
gather figs, nor of a bramble bush
gather they grapes. 45 The good
man out of the good treasure of his
heart bringeth forth that which is
good; and the evil *man* out of the
evil *treasure* bringeth forth that
which is evil: for out of the
abundance of the heart his mouth
speaketh.

46 And why call ye me,

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 7

21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy by thy name, and by thy name cast out demons, and by thy name do many "mighty works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

24 Every one therefore that

eth these words of mine, and doeth them,

shall be likened unto a wise man,

who built his house upon the rock:

25 and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house;

and it fell not: for it was founded upon the rock. 26 And every one that heareth these words of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house

upon the sand:

27 and the rain descend-

Luke 6

Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

47 Every one that

cometh unto me, and heareth my

words, and doeth them, I will show you to whom he is like: 48 he

is like a man building a house, who digged and went deep, and laid a foundation upon the rock:

and when a flood arose, the stream brake against that house, and could not shake it: "because it had been well builded.

49 But he that "heareth, and "doeth not, is like a man that built a house

upon the earth without a foundation;

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 7-8
ed, and the floods
came, and the
winds blew, and smote upon that house;
 and it fell: and great was the fall thereof.

23 And it came to pass, when Jesus
had finished these words, the multi-
tudes were astonished at his teaching:

29 for he taught them as one having authority, and not as their scribes.

1 And when he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes
followed him.

Luke 6
 against which
 the stream brake,
 and straightway it fell in; and the
 ruin of that house was great.

- ¹Some ancient authorities transpose ver. 4 and 5. ²Many ancient authorities insert *without cause*.
³An expression of contempt. ⁴Or, *Moreh*, a Hebrew expression of condemnation. ⁵Gr. *unto* or *into*.
⁶Gr. *Gehenna* of fire. ⁷Some ancient authorities omit *deliver thee*. ⁸Gr. *Gehenna*. ⁹Or, *toward*.
¹⁰Some ancient authorities read *But your speech shall be*. ¹¹Or, *evil*: as in ver. 39; vi. 13. ¹²Gr. *impress*.
¹³That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*. ¹⁴Some ancient authorities read *despairing of no man*.
¹⁵Some ancient authorities read *God your Father*. ¹⁶Gr. *our bread for the coming day*. Or, *our needful bread*.
¹⁷Many authorities, some ancient, but with variations, add *For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen*. ¹⁸Gr. *dig through*. ¹⁹Or, *his stature*. ²⁰Some ancient authorities omit *is the gate*.
²¹Many ancient authorities read *How narrow is the gate, &c*. ²²Gr. *powers*. ²³Many ancient authorities read *for it had been founded upon the rock*: as in Matt. vii. 25. ²⁴Gr. *heard*. ²⁵Gr. *did not*.

54. HEALING THE CENTURION'S SERVANT

Capernaum

Matt. 8:5-13
 5 And when he
 was entered into
 Capernaum, there came unto him

a centurion, beseeching him, 6 and

Luke 7:1-10
1 After he had
ended all his say-
 ings in the ears of the people, he
 entered into Capernaum.
2 And a certain centurion's
 'servant, who was 'dear unto him,
 was sick and at the point of death.
3 And when he heard concerning
 Jesus, he sent unto him elders
 of the Jews, asking him that he
 would come and save his 'servant.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8

saying, Lord,
my 'servant
lieth in the house sick of the
palsy, grievously tormented.

7 And

he saith*, I will come and heal him.

8 And the centurion answered and said,
Lord, I am not 'worthy that thou shouldest
come under my roof;

but only say 'the
word, and my 'servant shall be healed.

9 For I also am a man 'under authority,
having under myself soldiers: and I say
to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to
another, Come, and he cometh; and to
my 'servant, Do this, and he doeth it.
10 And when Jesus heard it, he mar-
velled, and said to them that followed,

Luke 7

4 And they, when
they came to
Jesus, besought him earnestly,
saying, He is worthy that thou
shouldest do this for him; 5 for he
loveth our nation, and himself built
us our synagogue.

6 And Jesus went
with them. And when he was now
not far from the house, the centurion
sent friends to him, saying unto
him, Lord, trouble not thyself; for
I am not 'worthy that thou shouldest
come under my roof: 7 wherefore
neither thought I myself worthy
to come unto thee:

but say 'the
word, and my 'servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under
authority, having under myself sol-
diers: and I say to this one, Go, and
he goeth; and to another, Come,
and he cometh; and to my 'servant,
Do this, and he doeth it. 9 And when
Jesus heard these things, he mar-
velled at him, and turned and said
unto the multitude that followed
him,

* The two words "unto him", which are in the standard text, have been omitted here (without doing violence to Matthew's story) to avoid ambiguity in the composite narrative.

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8	Luke 7
<p>Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.</p> <p>11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: 12 but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.</p> <p>13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And the servant was healed in that hour.</p>	<p>I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.</p> <p>10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole.*</p>

¹Gr. bond-servant. ²Or, precious to him. ³Or, boy. ⁴Gr. sufficient. ⁵Gr. with a word.
⁶Some ancient authorities insert set; as in Lk. 7:8. ⁷Many ancient authorities read With no man in Israel have I found so great faith. ⁸Gr. recline.

55. RAISING THE WIDOW'S SON

Nain

Luke 7:11-17

<p>11 And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he</p>
--

went to a city called Nain; and his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. 12 Now when he drew near to the gate of the city, behold, there was carried out one that was dead, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. 13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. 14 And he came nigh and touched the bier: and the bearers stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. 15 And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother.

* Matthew represents the centurion as coming personally to Jesus; to avoid ambiguity, therefore, the last verse (Matt. 8:13), although important, has of necessity been omitted from the emphasized sections comprising the composite narrative.

Luke 7

16 And fear took
hold on all : and

they glorified God, saying, A great prophet is arisen among us : and, God hath visited his people. 17 And this report went forth concerning him in the whole of Judæa, and all the region round about.

¹Many ancient authorities read *on the next day*.

56. THE INQUIRY FROM JOHN THE BAPTIST IN PRISON AND THE REPLY OF JESUS

Matt. 11:2-30

2 Now when John
heard

in the
prison the works of the Christ,

he sent by his disciples 3 and said unto him,

Art thou he that cometh, or look we for

another ? 4 And Jesus answered and said unto

them, Go and tell John the things which ye

hear and see : 5 the blind receive their sight,

and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed,

and the deaf hear, and the dead are

Luke 7:18-35

18 And the disci-
ples of John told
him

of all these things.

19 And John calling unto him 'two of his disciples sent them to the Lord, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another ? 20 And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another ? 21 In that hour he cured many of diseases and ²plagues and evil spirits; and on many that were blind he bestowed sight. 22 And he answered and said unto them, Go and tell John the things which ye have seen and heard; the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are

Matt. 11

raised up, and the poor have good tidings preached to them. 6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find no occasion of stumbling in me.

7 And as these went their way,

Jesus

began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a reed shaken with the wind? 8 But what went ye out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment?

Behold, they that wear soft raiment are in kings' houses. 9 'But wherefore went ye out? to see a prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. 10 This is he, of whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,

Who shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist: yet he that is but little in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. 12 And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and men of violence take it by force. 13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. 14 And if ye are willing to receive it, this is Elijah, that is to come.

Luke 7

raised up, the poor have good tidings preached to them. 23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find no occasion of stumbling in me.

24 And when the messengers of John were departed,

he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a reed shaken with the wind? 25 But what went ye out to see? a man clothed in soft raiment?

Behold, they that are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts. 26 But what went ye out to see? a prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. 27 This is he of whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,

Who shall prepare thy way before thee [Mal. 3:1].

28 I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there is none greater than John: yet he that is but little in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

Matt. 11

Luke 7

29 And all the
people when they

heard, and the publicans, justified God, ⁷being baptized with the baptism of John. 30 But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the counsel of God, ⁷being not baptized of him.

15 He that hath
ears ⁹to hear, let him hear.

16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the marketplaces, who call unto their fellows 17 and say, We piped unto you, and ye did not dance; we wailed, and ye did not ¹⁰mourn. 18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a demon. 19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a gluttonous man and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! And wisdom ¹¹is justified by her ¹²works.

20 Then
began he to upbraid the cities where-
in most of his ¹³mighty works were
done, because they repented not. 21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the ¹³mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 But I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment, than for you. 23 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt ¹⁴go down unto Hades: for if the ¹³mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day. 24 But I say unto you that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

31 Whereunto then shall
I liken the men of this generation,
and to what are they like? 32 They
are like unto children that sit
in the marketplace, and call one to
another; who say, We piped unto
you, and ye did not dance; we
wailed, and ye did not weep. 33 For
John the Baptist is come eating no
bread nor drinking wine; and ye
say, He hath a demon. 34 The Son
of man is come eating and drink-
ing; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous
man, and a winebibber, a friend of
publicans and sinners! 35 And wis-
dom ¹¹is justified of all her children.*

* Note the different reading in Matt. 11:19.

Matt. 11

25 At that season
Jesus answered

and said, I ¹thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: 26 yea, Father, ²for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. 27 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father; neither doth any know the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal *him*. 28 Come unto me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

¹Gr. *certain two*. ²Gr. *scourges*. ³Or, *the gospel*. ⁴Many ancient authorities read *But what went ye out to see? a prophet?* ⁵Gr. *lesser*. ⁶Or, *him*. ⁷Or, *having been*. ⁸Or, *not having been*.
⁹Some ancient authorities omit *to hear*. ¹⁰Gr. *beat the breast*. ¹¹Or, *was*. ¹²Many ancient authorities read *children*: as in Lk. 7. 35. ¹³Gr. *powers*. ¹⁴Many ancient authorities read *be brought down*.
¹⁵Or, *praise*. ¹⁶Or, *that*.

57. A SINFUL WOMAN ANOINTS CHRIST'S FEET — THE PARABLE OF THE TWO DEBTORS

The house of Simon a Pharisee

Luke 7:36-50

36 And one of the
Pharisees desired
him that he would

eat with him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and 'sat down to meat. 37 And behold, a woman who was in the city, a sinner; and when she knew that he was ²sitting at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought ³an alabaster cruse of ointment, 38 and standing behind at his feet, weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and ⁴kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. 39 Now when the Pharisee that had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were ⁵a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him, that she is a sinner. 40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto

Luke 7

thee. And he
saith, Teacher,

say on. 41 A certain lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred 'shillings, and the other fifty. 42 When they had not *wherewith* to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love him most? 43 Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to whom he forgave the most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. 44 And turning to the woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thy house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair. 45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. 46 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but she hath anointed my feet with ointment. 47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. 48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. 49 And they that 'sat at meat with him began to say 'within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth sins? 50 And he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

¹Or, *reclined at table.*

²Or, *reclining at table.*

³Or, *a flask.*

⁴Gr. *kissed much.*

⁵Some

ancient authorities read *the prophet.* See Jn. i.21,25.

⁶The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about

eight pence half-penny, or nearly seventeen cents.

⁷Gr. *kiss much.*

⁸Gr. *reclined.*

⁹Or, *among.*

58. THE SECOND TOUR OF GALILEE, WITH THE TWELVE AND SOME WOMEN

Luke 8:1-3

1 And it came to
pass soon after-
wards, that he

went about through cities and villages, preaching and bringing the 'good tidings of the kingdom of God, and with him the twelve, 2 and certain women who had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities: Mary that was called Magdalene, from whom seven demons had gone out, 3 and Joanna the wife of Chuzas Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, who ministered unto ²them of their substance.

¹Or, *gospel.*

²Many ancient authorities read *him.*

59. THE DEATH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

Matt. 14:6-13a

Mark 6:21-29

6 But when Herod's birthday came,

the daughter of Herodias

danced
in the midst,

and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised

with an oath

to give her whatsoever she should ask.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, and the high captains, and the chief men of Galilee; 22 and when the daughter of Herodias herself came in and

danced,

'she pleased Herod and them that sat at meat with him; and the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee. 23 And he sware

unto her,

Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of

Matt. 14

Mark 6

8 And she,
being put forward
by her mother,

saith, Give me here
on a platter the head
of John the Baptist.

9 And the king was
grieved; but for the
sake of his oaths,
and of them that sat
at meat with him,
he commanded it to
be given; 10 and he
sent and beheaded
John in the prison. 11

my kingdom. 24
And she went out,
and said unto her
mother, What
shall I ask? And
she said, The head
of John the Bap-
tizer.

25 And she

came in straight-
way with haste
unto the king,
and asked, saying,
I will that thou
forthwith give me
on a platter the
head of John the
Baptist. 26 And
the king was ex-
ceeding sorry;
but for the sake
of his oaths, and
of them that sat
at meat, he would
not reject her. 27
And straightway
the king sent
forth a soldier of
his guard, and
commanded to
bring his head:
and he went and
beheaded him in
the prison, 28

Matt. 14	Mark 6		
And his head was brought on a platter, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother. 12 And his disciples came, and took up the corpse, and buried him;	and brought his head on a platter, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother. 29 And when his disciples heard <i>thereof</i> , they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.		
and they went and told Jesus. 13 Now when Jesus heard <i>it</i> , he withdrew from thence ...			

¹Or, *military tribunes. Gr. chiliarchs.*
²Or, *it.*

²Some ancient authorities read *his daughter Herodias.*

60. THE HEALING OF A BLIND AND DUMB DEMONIAK OCCASIONS ANOTHER CONTROVERSY WITH THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES — CHRIST'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN SEEK TO TAKE HIM HOME

Probably Capernaum

Matt. 12:22-50	Mark 3:19b-35	Luke 8:19-21
	19b And he cometh 'into a house.	
	20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.	
21 And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold on him:	for they said, He is beside himself.	

Matt. 12	Mark 3		
22 Then was brought unto him			
<p>one possessed with a demon, blind and dumb : and he healed him, inso- much that the dumb man spake and saw. 23 And all the multitudes were amazed, and said, Can this be the son of David? 24 But when the Pharisees</p>			
<p>heard it, they said, This man doth not cast out demons, but</p>	<p>22 And the scribes that came down from Jerusalem</p>		
<p>by</p>	<p>said,</p>		
<p>'Beelzebub the prince of the demons.</p>	<p>He hath 'Beelze- bub, and, 'By</p>		
<p>25 And knowing their thoughts he</p>	<p>the prince of the demons casteth he out the de- mons.</p>		
<p>said unto them,</p>	<p>23 And he</p>		
<p>Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to</p>	<p>called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?</p>	<p>24 And if a kingdom be divided against it- self, that kingdom</p>	

Matt. 12
desolation ; and

every city or
house divided
against itself

shall not stand : 26
and if Satan

cast-
eth out Satan, he
is divided against
himself ; how then
shall his kingdom
stand ? 27 And if
I 'by 'Beelzebub
cast out demons, 'by whom do your sons cast them out ? therefore shall they
be your judges. 28 But if I 'by the Spirit of God cast out demons, then
is the kingdom
of God come
upon you. 29 Or
how can one
enter into the
house of the
strong *man*, and
spoil his goods,
except he first
bind the strong
man ? and then
he will spoil his
house. 30 He that
is not with me
is against me ;
and he that ga-
thereth not with

Mark 3

cannot stand.
25 And

if a house
be divided against
itself, that house

will not be able to
stand. 26 And if
Satan hath risen
up against him-
self, and

is divided,
he cannot stand, but
hath an end.

27 But
no one can enter into
the house of the
strong *man*, and spoil
his goods, except he
first bind the strong
man ; and then he
will spoil his house.

Matt. 12
me scattereth.

31 Therefore I say
unto you, Every
sin and blasphemy
shall be forgiven
unto men;

but the
blasphemy a-
gainst the Spirit
shall not be for-
given. 32 And
whosoever shall
speak a word a-
gainst the Son of
man, it shall be
forgiven him; but
whosoever shall
speak against the
Holy Spirit, it shall
not be forgiven
him,

neither in
this world, nor in
that which is to
come.

33 Either
make the tree

good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt :
for the tree is known by its fruit. 34 Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye,
being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the

Mark 3

28 Verily I say
unto you, All
their sins shall
be forgiven unto
the sons of
men, and their
blasphemies
wherewith soever
they shall blas-
pheme :

29 but
whosoever shall

blaspheme a-
gainst the Holy
Spirit hath nev-
er forgiveness,

but is guilty of
an eternal sin :

Matt. 12	Mark 3	Luke 8
mouth speaketh.		
35 The good man		
out of his good treasure bringeth forth good things: and the evil		
man out of his evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. 36 And I		
say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they		
shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. 37 For by thy		
words thou shalt		
be justified,		
and by thy		
words thou shalt		
be condemned.		
	30 because they	
	said, He hath	
	an unclean	
	spirit.	
38 Then certain		
of the scribes		
and Pharisees answered him, saying, Teacher, we would see a sign from		
thee. 39 But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous gener-		
ation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign		
of Jonah the prophet: 40 for as Jonah was three days and three nights in		
the belly of the 'whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three		
nights in the heart of the earth. 41 The men of Nineveh shall stand up in		
the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented		
at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, 'a greater than Jonah is here. 42		
The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation,		
and shall condemn it: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the		
wisdom of Solomon; and behold, 'a greater than Solomon is here. 43 But		
the unclean spirit, when 'he is gone out of the man, passeth through water-		
less places, seeking rest, and findeth it not. 44 Then 'he saith, I will return		
into my house whence I came out; and when 'he is come, 'he findeth it		
empty, swept, and garnished. 45 Then goeth 'he, and taketh with 'himself		
seven other spirits more evil than 'himself, and they enter in and dwell		
there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first. Even		
so shall it be also unto this evil generation.		
46 While he	31 And	19 And
was yet speaking		

Matt. 12
to the multi-
tudes, behold,

his mother and his
brethren

stood
without,

seeking
to speak to him.

47 ¹⁰And

one said
unto him, Be-
hold, thy mother
and thy brethren
stand without,
seeking to speak
to thee. 48 But
he answered and
said unto him
that told him,
Who is my mo-
ther? and who
are my brethren?

49 And he

Mark 3
there come

his mo-
ther and his breth-
ren; and,

standing
without, they sent
unto him, calling
him.

32 And a
multitude was
sitting about him;
and

they say
unto him, Be-
hold, thy mother
and thy brethren
without seek for
thee. 33 And he
answereth them, and
saith, Who is my mo-
ther and my brethren?

34 And looking
round on them
that sat round
about him, he

Luke 8

there came
to him his mother
and brethren, and
they could not
come at him for
the crowd. 20
And

it was told him,
Thy mother and thy
brethren stand with-
out, desiring to see
thee. 21 But he
answered and
said unto them,

Matt. 12	Mark 3	Luke 8
<p>stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and</p> <p>said, Behold, my mother and my brethren!</p>	<p>saith, Behold, my mother and my brethren !</p>	<p>My mother and my brethren are these that hear the word of God, and do it.</p>
<p>50 For whosoever shall do the will of</p> <p>my Father who is in heaven, he is my brother, and sis- ter, and mother.</p>	<p>35 For whosoever shall do the will of</p> <p>God, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.</p>	

¹Or, *home*. ²Or, *a demoniac*. ³Gr. *Beelzebub*. ⁴Or, *in*. ⁵Or, *age*. ⁶Gr. *sea-monster*.
⁷Gr. *more than*. ⁸Or, *it*. ⁹Or, *itself*. ¹⁰Some ancient authorities omit ver. 47.

61. THE FIRST GREAT GROUP OF PARABLES

Matt. 13:1-53	Mark 4:1-34	Luke 8:4-18
<p>1 On that day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side.</p> <p>2 And there were gathered unto</p>	<p>1 And again he began to teach by the sea side. And there is gathered unto</p>	<p>4 And when a great multitude came together,</p>

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
<p>him great multitudes,</p>	<p>him a very great multitude,</p>	
<p>so that he entered into a boat, and sat;</p>	<p>so that he entered into a boat, and sat in the sea;</p>	<p>and they of every city resorted unto him,</p>
<p>and all the multi- tude stood</p>	<p>and all the multitude were by the sea</p>	
<p>on the beach. 3 And he spake to them many things in parables,</p>	<p>on the land. 2 And he taught them many things in parables,</p>	<p>he spake by a parable:</p>
<p>saying,</p>	<p>and said unto them in his teach- ing, 3 Hearken:</p>	
<p>Behold, the sower</p>	<p>Behold, the sower</p>	<p>5 The sower</p>
<p>went forth to sow;</p>	<p>went forth to sow:</p>	<p>went forth to sow his seed:</p>
<p>4 and as he sowed,</p>	<p>4 and it came to pass, as he sowed,</p>	<p>and as he sowed, some fell by the way side;</p>
<p>some <i>seeds</i> fell by</p>	<p>some <i>seed</i> fell by the way side,</p>	
<p>the way side, and the</p>		<p>and it was trod- den under foot,</p>
<p>birds came and de-</p>	<p>and the birds</p>	<p>and the birds of the heaven</p>
<p>voured them: 5 and</p>	<p>came</p>	
<p>others fell upon the</p>	<p>and devoured it. 5 And other fell</p>	<p>devoured it. 6 And other fell</p>
<p>rocky places, where</p>	<p>on the rocky ground, where</p>	<p>on the rock;</p>
<p>they had not much</p>	<p>it had not much</p>	

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
<p>earth: and straightway they sprang up, because they had no deepness of earth: 6 and when the sun was risen, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And others fell upon the thorns; and the thorns grew up and choked them: 8 and others fell upon the good ground, and yielded fruit,</p>	<p>earth; and straightway it sprang up, because it had no deepness of earth: 6 and when the sun was risen, it was scorched; and because it had no root,</p> <p>it withered away. 7 And other fell among the thorns, and the thorns grew up, and</p> <p>choked it, and it yielded no fruit. 8 And others fell into the good ground, and yielded fruit, growing up and increasing; and brought forth,</p>	<p>and as soon as it grew, it withered away, because it had no moisture. 7 And other fell amidst the thorns; and the thorns grew with it, and</p> <p>choked it. 8 And other fell into the good ground, and grew, and brought forth fruit a hundredfold.</p>
<p>some a hundred-fold, some sixty, some thirty.</p>	<p>thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.</p>	<p>As he said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.</p>
<p>9 He that hath ears, let him hear.</p>	<p>9 And he said, Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.</p>	

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
10 And the disciples	10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve	9 And
came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? 11 And he answered and said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath. 13 Therefore	<p>asked</p> <p>of him the parables.</p> <p>11 And he said unto them, Unto you is given the mystery of the kingdom of God: but</p>	<p>asked</p> <p>him what this parable might be. 10</p> <p>And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God:</p>
<p>1 I to them in parables; because seeing they see not, and</p>	<p>unto them that are without, all things are done in parables: 12 that seeing they may see, and</p>	<p>but to the rest in parables; that seeing they may not see,</p>

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.	not perceive ;* and hearing they may hear, and not understand ; lest haply they should turn again, and it should be forgiven them.	and hearing they may not understand.
14 And unto them is ful- filled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith,	<p>By hearing ye shall hear, and shall in no wise understand ; And seeing ye shall see, and shall in no wise perceive :</p> <p>15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, And their ears are dull of hearing, And their eyes they have closed ; Lest haply they should perceive with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their heart, And should turn again, And I should heal them [Is. 6:9-10].</p> <p>16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see ; and your ears, for they hear. 17 For verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not ; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not.</p> <p>13 And he saith unto them, Know ye not this para- ble ? and how shall ye know all the parables ?</p> <p>18 Hear then ye the parable of the sower.</p>	

* Note Matt. 13:13

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
<p>19 When any one heareth</p> <p>the word of the kingdom, understanding* it not,</p> <p>then cometh</p> <p>the evil one, and snatcheth</p> <p>away that which hath been sown in his heart.</p>	<p>14 The sower soweth the word.</p> <p>15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown ;</p> <p>and when they have heard, straightway cometh Satan,</p> <p>and taketh away the word which hath been sown in them.</p> <p>16 And these</p>	<p>11 Now the parable is this : The seed is the word of God.</p> <p>12 And those by the way side</p> <p>are they that have heard ;</p> <p>then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word from their heart, that they may not believe and be saved.</p>

* The wording of the text (which reads "and understandeth") has been slightly altered, without affecting the meaning, in order to avoid ambiguity in the composite narrative.

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
<p>This is he that was sown by the way side. 20 And he that was sown upon the rocky places, this is he that heareth the word, and straightway with joy receiveth it; 21 yet hath he not root in himself, but endureth for a while; and when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway he stumbleth. 22 And he that was sown among the thorns, this is he that heareth the word; and the care of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches,</p>	<p>in like manner are they that are sown upon the rocky places, who, when they have heard the word, straightway receive it with joy; 17 and they have no root in themselves, but endure for a while; then,</p> <p>when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway they stumble. 18 And others are they that are sown among the thorns; these are they that have heard the word,</p> <p>19 and the cares of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and</p>	<p>13 And those on the rock <i>are</i> they who, when they have heard, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, who for a while believe, and</p> <p>in time of temptation</p> <p>[they] fall away. 14 And</p> <p>that which fell among the thorns, these are they that have heard, and as they go on their way they are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of <i>this</i> life, and</p>

Matt. 13	Mark 4	Luke 8
choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. 23 And he that was sown upon the good ground, this is he that heareth the word,	the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it be- cometh unfruit- ful. 20 And those are they that were sown upon the good ground ; such as hear the word, and accept it,	bring no fruit to perfection. 15 And that in the good ground, these are such as in an honest and good heart, having heard the word,
understanding* it; who verily	and bear fruit,	hold it fast, and bring forth fruit with patience.
beareth fruit, and bringeth forth,	thirty- fold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.	16 And
some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.	21 And he said unto them, Is the lamp brought to be put under the bushel, or under the bed, and not to be put on the stand?	no man, when he hath lighted a lamp, covereth it

* See the foot-note on page III.

Mark 4

22 For there is nothing hid, save that it should be manifested; neither was *anything* made secret, but that it should come to light.

23 If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear. 24 And he said unto them, Take heed

what ye hear:

with what measure ye mete it shall be measured unto you; and more shall be given unto you. 25 For

he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken away

Luke 8

with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but putteth it on a stand, that they that enter in may see the light. 17 For nothing is hid, that shall not be made manifest; nor *anything* secret, that shall not be known and come to light.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear:

for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away

Matt. 13

Mark 4

Luke 8

even that which
he hath.

even that which
he ³thinketh he
hath.

26 And

he said, So is the

kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed upon the earth; 27 and should sleep and rise night and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he knoweth not how. 28 The earth ¹beareth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, then the full grain in the ear. 29 But when the fruit ⁵is ripe, straightway he ⁶putteth forth the sickle, because

the harvest is
come.

24 An-

other parable set
he before them,

saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his field: 25 but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed ⁷tares also among the wheat, and went away. 26 But when the blade sprang up and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. 27 And the ⁸servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence then hath it tares? 28 And he said unto them, ⁹An enemy hath done this. And the ⁸servants say unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? 29 But he saith, Nay; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them; but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 Another

parable set he be-
fore them, saying,

30 And he said,

How shall we
liken the kingdom
of God? or in
what parable
shall we set it
forth?

The kingdom of

Matt. 13	Mark 4		
<p>heaven is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: 32 which indeed</p>	<p>31 ¹⁰It is like a grain of mustard seed, which,</p>		
<p>is less than all seeds; but when it is grown, it is greater than the herbs,</p>	<p>when it is sown upon the earth, though it be less than all the seeds that are upon the earth, 32 yet when it is sown, groweth up,</p>		
<p>and be- cometh a tree,</p>	<p>and becometh greater than all the herbs, and putteth out great branches; so that</p>		
<p>so that the birds of the heaven</p>	<p>the birds of the heaven can</p>		
<p>come and lodge</p>	<p>lodge under the shadow</p>		
<p>in the branches thereof.</p>	<p>thereof.</p>		
<p>33 Another parable spake</p>			
<p>he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three "measures of meal, till it was all leavened.</p>			
<p>34 All these things spake Jesus in para- bles unto the multitudes; and</p>	<p>33 And</p>		

Matt. 13

Mark 4

without a parable
spake he

nothing
unto them: 35
that it might be
fulfilled which

was spoken through the prophet, saying,

I will open my mouth in parables ;

I will utter things hidden from the foundation ¹²of the world [Ps. 78:2].

36 Then he
left the multi-
tudes, and went
into the house:
and his disciples
came

but

privately

unto him,
saying, Explain
unto us the para-
ble of the tares of
the field. 37 And

he answered

to his
own disciples he
expounded all
things.

and
said, He that
soweth the good

seed is the Son of man; 38 and the field is the world; and the good seed,
these are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the
evil one; 39 and the enemy that sowed them is the devil: and the harvest

Matt. 13
is ¹³the end of the
world; and the

reapers are angels. 40 As therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire; so shall it be in the ¹³end of the world. 41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity, 42 and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth. 43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears¹⁴, let him hear.

44 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in the field; which a man found, and hid; and ¹⁵in his joy he goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a merchant seeking goodly pearls: 46 and having found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a ¹⁶net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: 48 which, when it was filled, they drew up on the beach; and they sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but the bad they cast away. 49 So shall it be in ¹²the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the righteous, 50 and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.

51 Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea. 52 And he said unto them, Therefore every scribe who hath been made a disciple to the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, who bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

¹Or, age. ²Or, steadfastness. ³Or, seemeth to have. ⁴Or, yieldeth. ⁵Or, alloweth. ⁶Or, sendeth forth. ⁷Or, darne! ⁸Gr. bondservants. ⁹Gr. a man that is an enemy. ¹⁰Gr. As unto. ¹¹The word in the Greek denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half. ¹²Many ancient authorities omit of the world. ¹³Or, the consummation of the age. ¹⁴Some ancient authorities add here, and in ver. 9, to hear; as in Mk. iv.9; Lk. viii.8. ¹⁵Or, for joy thereof. ¹⁶Gr. drag-net.

62. STILLING THE STORM

The Sea of Galilee

Matt. 8:18,23-27

18 Now

when Jesus
saw great multi-
tudes about him,

he gave command-
ment to depart
unto the other side.

23 And

when he
was entered into
a boat, his disci-
ples followed him.

24 And

behold,
there arose a

Mark 4:35-41

35 And on that
day, when even
was come,

he
saith unto them,

Let us go over unto
the other side.

36 And leav-
ing the multi-
tude,

they take
him with them,
even as he was,
in the boat.

And
other boats were
with him.

37 And
there ariseth a

Luke 8:22-25

22 Now it came to
pass on one of those
days, that he entered
into a boat, himself
and his disciples; and
he said unto them,

Let us go over un-
to the other side of
the lake:

and they
launched forth.

23 But as they
sailed he fell
asleep: and

there
came down a

Matt. 8	Mark 4	Luke 8
<p>great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the boat was covered with the waves:</p>	<p>storm of ^{great} wind,</p>	<p>storm of wind on the lake;</p>
	<p>and the waves beat into the boat, insomuch that the boat was now filling. 38 And he himself was</p>	<p>and they were filling <i>with water</i>, and</p>
<p>but he was asleep.</p>	<p>in the stern, asleep on the cushion: and they</p>	
<p>25 And they came</p>		<p>were in jeopardy. 24 And they came</p>
<p>to him, and awoke him, saying,</p>	<p>awake him, and say unto him, Teacher,</p>	<p>to him, and awoke him, saying,</p>
<p>Save, Lord;</p>	<p>carest thou not that we perish?</p>	<p>Master, master,</p>
	<p>39 And he awoke, and rebuked the wind,</p>	<p>we perish. And he awoke, and rebuked the wind</p>
	<p>and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.</p>	<p>and the raging of the water:</p>
<p>we perish. 26 And he saith unto them, Why</p>	<p>40 And he said unto them, Why</p>	<p>and they ceased, and there was a calm. 25 And he said unto them, Where</p>

Matt. 8	Mark 4	Luke 8
are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm. 27 And the men marvelled, saying,	are ye fearful? have ye not yet faith? 41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who then	is your faith? And being afraid they marvelled, saying one to another, Who then is this, that
What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?	is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?	he commandeth even the winds and the water, and they obey him?

63. HEALING THE GERASENE DEMONIAIC *

South-east of the Sea of Galilee

Matt. 8:28-9:1a	Mark 5:1-20	Luke 8:26-39
28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes,	1 And they came to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gerasenes. 2 And when he was come	26 And they arrived at the country of the 'Gerasenes, which is over against Galilee. 27 And when he was come forth

*Matthew mentions two demoniacs. As Mark and Luke describe only one, it is probable that he was the more prominent one.

Matt. 8	Mark 5	Luke 8
<p>there met him two</p> <p>possessed with</p> <p>de-</p> <p>mons, coming forth out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man could pass by that way.</p> <p>29 And</p>	<p>out of the boat,</p> <p>straightway there met him</p> <p>out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, 3 who</p> <p>had his dwelling in the tombs:</p> <p>and no man could any more bind him, no, not with a chain; 4 because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been</p>	<p>upon the land,</p> <p>there met him a certain man out of the city, who had</p> <p>demons;</p> <p>and</p> <p>for a long time he had worn no clothes, and abode not in any house, but</p> <p>in the tombs.</p> <p>29b For often-times it had seized him: and he was kept under guard,</p> <p>and bound</p> <p>with chains and fetters; and breaking the bands asunder,</p>

Matt. 8	Mark 5	Luke 8
	rent asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: and no man had strength to tame him. 5 And	he was driven of the demon into the deserts. 28 And
	always, night and day, in the tombs and in the mountains, he was crying out, and cutting himself with stones. 6 And	
behold,	when he saw Jesus from afar, he	when he saw Jesus, he cried out, and
	ran and	fell down before him, and
they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Son of God?	worshipped him; 7 and crying out with a loud voice, he saith, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God?	with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God?
art thou come hither		

Matt. 8 to torment us be- fore the time?	Mark 5	Luke 8
	I adjure thee by God, tor- ment me not.	I beseech thee, torment me not.
	8 For he said unto him, Come forth, thou unclean spirit, out of the man. 9 And he asked him, What is thy name?	29 For he was commanding the unclean spirit to come out from the man. 30 And Jesus asked him, What is thy name?
	And he saith unto him, My name is Legion; for we are many.	And he said, Legion;
	10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country.	for many demons were entered into him. 31 And they entreated him
	11 Now there was there on the mountain side a great herd of	that he would not command them to depart into the abyss.
Now there was 30 afar off from them	on the mountain side a great herd of	32 Now
a herd of many swine feeding. 31 And the demons besought him,	swine feeding. 12 And they be- sought him,	there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the moun- tain: and they entreated him

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 8	Mark 5	Luke 8
<p>saying, If thou cast us out, send us away into the herd of swine. 32 And he said unto them, Go. And they came out, and went into the swine:</p>	<p>saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. 13 And he gave them leave. And the unclean spirits came out, and entered into the swine:</p>	<p>that he would give them leave to enter into them. And he gave them leave. 33 And the demons came out from the man, and entered in-</p>
<p>and behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea, and perished in the waters.</p>	<p>and the herd rushed down the steep into the sea. in number about two thousand; and they were drowned in the sea.</p>	<p>to the swine: and the herd rushed down the steep into the lake, and were drowned.</p>
<p>33 And they that fed them fled, and went away into the city, and told everything,</p>	<p>14 And they that fed them fled, and told it in the city, and in the country.</p>	<p>34 And when they that fed them saw what had come to pass, they fled, and told it in the city and in the country.</p>

Matt. 8	Mark 5	Luke 8
<p>and what was befallen to them that were possessed with demons. 34 And behold, all the city came out to</p>	<p>And they came to see what it was that had come to pass. 15 And they come to Jesus, and behold him that was possessed with demons</p>	<p>35 And they went out to see what had come to pass; and they came to Jesus, and found the man,</p>
<p>meet Jesus: and when they saw him,</p>	<p>sit- ting, clothed and in his right mind,</p>	<p>from whom the demons were gone out, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, at the feet of Jesus:</p>
	<p>even him that had the legion: and</p> <p>they were afraid. 16 And they that saw it declared unto them how it befell him that was possessed with demons,</p>	<p>and</p> <p>they were afraid. 36 And they that saw it told them how he that was possessed with de- mons was ³made whole.</p>
	<p>and con- cerning the swine.</p> <p>17 And they</p>	<p>37 And all the people of the country of the</p>

Matt. 8	Mark 5	Luke 8
<p>they besought <i>him</i> that he would depart from their borders.</p>	<p>began to beseech him to depart from their borders.</p>	<p>Gerasenes round about</p> <p>asked him to depart from them;</p> <p>for they were holden with great fear:</p>
<p>I And he entered into a boat,</p>	<p>18 And as he was enter- ing into the boat, he that had been possessed with demons</p> <p>besought him that he</p>	<p>and he en- tered into a boat, and returned. 38 But the man</p> <p>from whom the demons were gone out prayed him that he</p>
	<p>might be with him. 19 And he suffered him not, but</p> <p>saith unto him, Go to thy house</p> <p>unto thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and <i>how</i> he had mercy on thee. 20 And he went his way, and began to publish</p> <p>in</p>	<p>might be with him: but he</p> <p>sent him away, saying, 39 Return to thy house,</p> <p>and declare how great things God hath done for thee.</p>
		<p>And he went his way, publishing</p> <p>throughout</p>

	Mark 5	Luke 8
	Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him : and all men mar- velled.	the whole city how great things Jesus had done for him.

time. ¹Many ancient authorities read *Gergesenes* ; others, *Gadarenes* : and so in ver. 37.

²Or, *saved*.

²Or, *of a long*

64. RETURNING, JESUS HEALS THE WOMAN WHO TOUCHED HIS GARMENT AND RAISES JAIRUS' DAUGHTER

Probably Capernaum

Matt. 9:1b, 18-26

Mark 5:21-43

Luke 8:40-56

1b and crossed over,

and came into
his own city.

18 While he spake
these things unto
them, behold, there
came

21 And when Jesus
had

crossed over
again in the boat
unto the other
side,

a great mul-
titude was ga-
thered unto him;
and

he was by
the sea. 22 And
there cometh

40 And as Je-
sus

returned,

the
multitude wel-
comed him; for
they were all
waiting for him.
41 And

behold,
there came

Matt. 9	Mark 5	Luke 8
<p>a ruler,</p> <p>and worshipped him,</p>	<p>one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and seeing him, he falleth at his feet,</p> <p>23 beseeching* him much,</p>	<p>a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet,</p> <p>and besought him to come into his house;</p>
<p>saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.</p>	<p>saying, My little daughter is at the point of death: <i>I pray thee</i>, that thou come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be ²made whole, and live.</p>	<p>42 for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she was dying.</p>
<p>19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples. 20 And</p>	<p>24 And he went with him; and a great multitude followed him, and</p>	<p>But as he went the multitudes</p>

* See the foot-note on page III.

Matt. 9	Mark 5	Luke 8
behold, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years,	they thronged him. 25 And	thronged him. 43
	a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years,	And a woman having
	26 and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had,	an issue of blood
		twelve years, who
		had spent all her living
		upon physicians,
		and could not be healed of any,
	and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, 27 having heard the things concerning Jesus, came in the crowd	
came		44 came
behind him, and touched the border of his garment: 21 for she said within herself, If I do but touch his garment, I shall be made whole.	behind, and touched his garment. 28 For she said, If I touch but his garments, I shall be made whole.	behind him, and
		touched the border
		of his garment:
	29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her plague.	and
		immediately the
		issue of her blood
		stanchd.
	30 And straight-	

Matt. 9	Mark 5	Luke 8
	<p>way Jesus, perceiving in himself that the power <i>proceeding</i> from him had gone forth, turned him about in the crowd, and said, Who touched my garments?</p>	
	<p>31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?</p>	<p>45 And Jesus said, Who is it that touched me?</p> <p>And when all denied, Peter said, and they that were with him, Master, the multitudes press thee and crush thee.</p> <p>46 But Jesus said, Some one did touch me; for I perceived that power had gone forth from me.</p>
<p>22 But Jesus turning and seeing her</p>	<p>32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.</p>	<p>47 And when</p>

Matt. 9	Mark 5	Luke 8
	33 But the woman	the woman saw that she was not hid, she came
	fearing and trem- bling, knowing what had been done to her,	trembling,
	and fell down ^{came} be- fore him, and	and falling down before him de- clared in the pre- sence of all the people for what cause she touched him, and how she was heal- ed immediately. 48 And
said,	[she] told him all the truth. 34 And he said unto her,	he said unto
Daughter, be of good cheer; thy faith hath	Daughter, thy faith hath	her, Daughter, thy
'made thee whole.	'made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy 'plague.	faith hath 'made thee whole; go in peace.
And the woman was 'made whole from that hour.	35 While he yet spake,	49 While he yet spake, there cometh one

Matt. 9	Mark 5	Luke 8
	<p>they come from the ruler of the synagogue's <i>house</i>, saying, Thy daughter is dead:</p> <p>why troublest thou the Teacher any further? 36</p> <p>But Jesus,</p> <p>⁷not heeding the word spoken, saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Fear not, only believe.</p> <p>38 And they come to the house of the ruler of the synagogue; 37 And he suffered</p> <p>no man to follow with him, save Peter,</p> <p>and</p> <p>⁸James, and John the brother of</p> <p>⁸James. 38b and</p>	<p>from the ruler of the synagogue's <i>house</i>, saying, Thy daughter is dead;</p> <p>trouble not the Teacher. 50 But Jesus</p> <p>hearing it,</p> <p>answered him, Fear not: only believe, and she shall be ²made whole.</p> <p>51 And when he came to the house, he suffered</p> <p>not any man to enter in with him, save Peter,</p> <p>and John, and James, and the father of the maiden and her mother.</p>
<p>23 And when Jesus</p>		<p>52 And</p>

Matt. 9	Mark 5	Luke 8
<p>came into the ruler's house, and saw the flute-players, and the crowd making a tumult,</p>	<p>he beholdeth a tumult, and</p>	
	<p><i>many weeping and wailing</i></p>	<p>all were weeping, and bewailing her:</p>
<p>24 he said,</p>	<p>greatly. 39 And when he was entered in, he saith unto them, Why make ye a tumult, and weep?</p>	<p>but he said, Weep not; for she</p>
<p>Give place: for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.</p>	<p>the child is not dead, but sleepeth.</p>	<p>is not dead, but sleepeth. 53 And</p>
<p>And they</p>	<p>40 And they laughed him to scorn.</p>	<p>they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.</p>
<p>laughed him to scorn.</p>		
<p>25 But when the crowd was put forth,</p>	<p>But he, having put them all forth, taketh the father of the child and her mother and them that were with him, and goeth in where the child was. 41 And taking the child</p>	
<p>he entered in, and</p>		
<p>took her</p>		<p>54 But he, taking her</p>

<p>Matt. 9</p> <p>by the hand;</p> <p>and the dam- sel arose.</p> <p>26 And the fame hereof went forth into all that land.</p>	<p>Mark 5</p> <p>by the hand, he saith unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being in- terpreted, Dam- sel, I say unto thee, Arise.</p> <p>42 And</p> <p>straightway the damsel rose up, and walked;</p> <p>for she was twelve years old. 43b And he commanded that something should be given her to eat. 42b And they</p> <p>were amazed straight- way with a great amazement. 43 And he charged them much that no man should know</p> <p>this :</p>	<p>Luke 8</p> <p>by the hand, called, say- ing, Maiden, arise.</p> <p>55 And her spir- it returned, and</p> <p>she rose up immediately:</p> <p>and he commanded that something be given her to eat. 56 And her parents</p> <p>were amaz- ed: but he charged them to tell no man what had been done.</p>
--	---	---

¹Gr. one ruler. Compare Mk. 5. 22. ²Or, saved. ³Some ancient authorities omit *had spent all her living upon physicians, and.*

⁴Gr. scourge. ⁵Some ancient authorities omit *and they that were with him.* ⁶Or, saved thee. ⁷Or, overhearing. ⁸Or, Jacob. ⁹Gr. this fame.

65. JESUS HEALS TWO BLIND MEN AND A DUMB DEMONIAK

Probably Capernaum

Matt. 9:27-34

27 And as Jesus
passed by from
thence, two blind

men followed him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. 28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. 29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you. 30 And their eyes were opened. And Jesus strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it. 31 But they went forth, and spread abroad his fame in all that land.

32 And as they went forth, behold, there was brought to him a dumb man possessed with a demon. 33 And when the demon was cast out, the dumb man spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. 34 But the Pharisees said, By the prince of the demons casteth he out demons.

¹Or, sternly. ²Or, In.

66. THE FINAL * REJECTION AT NAZARETH

Matt. 13:54-58

Mark 6:1-6a

54 And coming

1 And he went
out from thence;
and he cometh

* It is not necessary to identify this visit to Nazareth with that recorded by Luke (sec. 39) as taking place at the beginning of the great Galilean ministry. It is only natural that after a long interval Jesus should give His own townspeople another opportunity to accept Him and His message. Moreover, the details of the two visits are different.

Matt. 13

into
his own country he
taught them in their
synagogue, insomuch
that they were aston-
ished, and said,
Whence hath this
man this wisdom,
and these ²mighty
works? 55 Is not
this the carpenter's
son? is not his mo-
ther called Mary?
and his brethren,
³James, and Joseph,
and Simon, and
Judas?

56 And
his sisters, are
they not all

with us? Whence
then hath this man
all these things? 57
And they were 'of-
fended in him. But
Jesus said unto them,

Mark 6

into his own coun-
try; and his dis-
ciples follow him.
2 And when the
sabbath was
come, he began
to teach in the
synagogue: and
'many hearing
him were aston-
ished, saying,
Whence hath this
man these things?
and, What is the
wisdom that is
given unto this
man, and *what*
mean such
²mighty works
wrought by his
hands? 3 Is not
this the carpen-
ter, the son of
Mary, and bro-
ther of ³James,
and Joses, and
Judas, and
Simon?

and are
not his sisters

here with us?
And they were
'offended in him.
4 And Jesus said
unto them, A

Matt. 13	Mark 6	
A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country, and in his own house.	prophet is not without honor, save in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. 5 And he could there do no ¹ mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. 6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief.	
58 And he did not many ² mighty works there because of their unbelief.		

¹Some ancient authorities insert *the*.
²Gr. *power*.

³Gr. *powers*.

⁴Or, *Jacob*.

⁵Gr. *caused to stumble*.

67. THE THIRD TOUR OF GALILEE — JESUS INSTRUCTS THE TWELVE AND SENDS THEM FORTH BY TWOS

Matt. 9:35-10:1, 5-11:1	Mark 6:6b-13	Luke 9:1-6
35 And Jesus went about all the cities and the villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the 'gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness. 36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and scattered, as sheep not having a shepherd. 37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest indeed is plenteous, but the laborers are few. 38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth laborers into his harvest.	6b And he went round about the villages teaching.	

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 10	Mark 6	Luke 9
1 And he called unto him his twelve disciples, and	7 And he calleth unto him the twelve, and	1 And he called the twelve together, and
gave them authority over unclean	began to send them forth by two and two; and he gave them authority over the unclean	gave them power and authority over all demons, and
spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness. 5 These twelve Jesus sent forth,	spirits; 8 and	to cure diseases. 2 And he sent them forth
and charged them, saying, Go not into any way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans: 6 but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. 7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. 8 Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out demons: freely ye received, freely give.	he charged them that they should	to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. 3 And he said unto them,
9 Get you	take nothing for their	Take nothing for your

THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Matt. 10	Mark 6	Luke 9
<p>no gold, nor silver, nor brass in your 'purses; 10 no wallet for your journey, neither two coats, nor shoes, nor staff:*</p>	<p>journey, save a staff only;</p>	<p>journey, neith- er staff, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money; neither have two coats.</p>
<p>for the laborer is worthy of his food. 11 And into whatsoever city or village ye shall enter, search out who in it is worthy; and</p>	<p>no bread, no wal- let, no 'money in their 'purse; 9 but to go shod with sandals: and, said he, put not on two coats. 10 And he said unto them, Wheresoever ye enter into a house,</p>	<p>4 And</p>
<p>there abide till ye go forth. 12 And</p>	<p>there abide till ye depart thence. 11 And</p>	<p>into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart. 5 And</p>
<p>as ye enter into the house, salute it. 13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace</p>		

* It should be noticed that according to Mark the instructions included permission to carry staves and to wear sandals. This would seem to indicate that in this respect the instructions to all the disciples were not the same, and that Peter (who is believed to be the main source for Mark's Gospel) and his companion, at least, were permitted this additional equipment probably because they were being sent to a more rugged part of the country.

Matt. 10	Mark 6	Luke 9
<p>come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. 14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, as ye go forth out of that house or that city, shake off the dust</p> <p>of your feet.</p>	<p>whatsoever place shall not receive you, and they hear you not, as ye go forth thence, shake off the dust that is under your feet for a testimony unto them.</p>	<p>as many as receive you not, when ye depart from that city, shake off the dust from your feet for a testimony against them.</p>
<p>15 Verily I say unto</p>		

you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.

16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. 17 But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they will scourge you; 18 yea and before governors and kings shall ye be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. 19 But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what ye shall speak. 20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you. 21 And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. 22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. 23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone through the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

24 A disciple is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his teacher, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how

Matt. 10-11
much more them
of his household !

Mark 6

Luke 9

26 Fear them not therefore : for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; and hid, that shall not be known. 27 What I tell you in the darkness, speak ye in the light ; and what ye hear in the ear, proclaim upon the house-tops. 28 And be not afraid of them that kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul : but rather fear him who is able to destroy both soul and body in ¹⁷hell. 29 Are not two sparrows sold for a penny ? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father : 30 but the very hairs of your head are all numbered. 31 Fear not therefore : ye are of more value than many sparrows. 32 Every one therefore who shall confess ¹¹me before men, ¹²him will I also confess before my Father who is in heaven. 33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father who is in heaven.

34 Think not that I came to ¹³send peace on the earth : I came not to ¹³send peace, but a sword. 35 For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law : 36 and a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household. 37 He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me ; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. 38 And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me. 39 He that ¹⁴findeth his life shall lose it ; and he that ¹⁵loseth his life for my sake shall find it.

40 He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. 41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward : and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward. 42 And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you he shall in no wise lose his reward.

1 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in their cities.

12 And they went out, and	6 And they departed, and
------------------------------	-----------------------------

Mark 6

preached

that
men should re-
pent. 13 And they
cast out many
demons, and an-
ointed with oil
many that were
sick, and healed
them.

Luke 9

went throughout
the villages,
preaching the
'gospel,

and healing
everywhere.

¹Or, good tidings. ²Some ancient authorities omit the sick. ³Gr. girdles. ⁴Gr. brass. ⁵Gr. girdle. ⁶Or, simple. ⁷Or, put them to death. ⁸Gr. bondservant. ⁹Gr. Beelzebub. ¹⁰Gr. Gehenna. ¹¹Gr. in me. ¹²Gr. in him. ¹³Gr. cast. ¹⁴Or, found. ¹⁵Or, lost.

68. HEARING ABOUT JESUS, HEROD ANTIPAS FEARS THAT
HE IS JOHN THE BAPTIST RISEN FROM THE DEAD

Probably Tiberius

Matt. 14:1-2

1 At that season
Herod the tet-
rarch heard the
report concern-
ing Jesus, 2 and

Mark 6:14-16

14 And king Herod
heard thereof;

for
his name had
become known:

Luke 9:7-9

7 Now Herod the
tetrarch heard

of all that was
done:

and he was
much perplexed,
because that it

Matt. 14	Mark 6	Luke 9
<p>said</p> <p>unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore do these powers work in him.</p>	<p>and 'he said,</p> <p>John the Baptizer is risen from the</p> <p>dead, and therefore do these powers work in him.</p> <p>15 But others said,</p> <p>It is Elijah.</p> <p>And</p> <p>others said,</p> <p><i>It is a prophet, even as one of the prophets.</i></p> <p>16 But Herod, when he heard thereof, said,</p> <p>John, whom I beheaded,</p> <p>he is risen.</p>	<p>was said by some, that John was risen from the dead;</p> <p>8 and by some,</p> <p>that Elijah had appeared; and</p> <p>by others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.</p> <p>9 And Herod said,</p> <p>John I beheaded: but who is this, about whom I hear such things?</p> <p>And he sought to see him.</p>

'Some ancient authorities read *they*.

69. THE RETURN OF THE TWELVE

Mark 6:30

30 And the apostles

gather themselves
together unto Je-
sus; and they told
him all things,
whatsoever they
had done, and
whatsoever they
had taught.

Luke 9:10a

10 And the apos-
tles, when they
were returned,

declared unto him
what things they had
done.

PART VII

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

IN DISTRICTS BEYOND GALILEE

FROM SPRING TO AUTUMN, PROBABLY A. D. 29

A. THE FIRST RETIREMENT* ACROSS THE LAKE

70. FEEDING THE FIVE THOUSAND

North-east shore of the Sea of Galilee

Matt. 14:13b-21

Mark 6:31-44

Luke 9:10b-17

John 6:1-13

31 And he

saith
unto them, Come
ye yourselves a-
part into a desert
place, and rest a

1 After these
things Jesus

* During this six months' period, Jesus made three retirements with the twelve from Galilee to the districts further north. Leaving the hot shores of the lake, He spent the summer on the cooler plateaux, devoting these months to the more intensive teaching of His chosen apostles.

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 14	Mark 6	Luke 9	John 6
	while. For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.		
	32 And they went away in the boat	10b And he took them,	
13b he withdrew from thence in a boat,		and withdrew	away went
		apart	to the other side of the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.
	to a desert place apart. 33 And the people saw them . going, and many knew them, and	to a city called Bethsaida.*	
to a desert place apart: and ,		11 But the	
	when the multitudes heard thereof, they followed him 'on foot from	multitudes perceiving it followed him :	2 And a great multitude followed
	ran together there 'on foot from		

* This was evidently Bethsaida Julias (so named by the tetrarch Philip), near the north-east shore of the Sea of Galilee.

<p>Matt. 14 the cities.</p>	<p>Mark 6 all the cities, and outwent them.</p>	<p>Luke 9</p>	<p>John 6 him, because they beheld the signs which he did on</p>
<p>14 And he came forth, and saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them,</p> <p>and healed their sick. 15 And when even was come, the disciples came to him, saying, The place is desert, and the</p>	<p>34 And he came forth and saw a great multitude, and</p> <p>he had compassion on them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd:</p> <p>and he</p> <p>began to teach them many things. 35 And</p> <p>when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, The place is desert, and the</p>	<p>and he welcomed them, and spake to them of the kingdom of God, and</p> <p>them that had need of healing he cured. 12 And the day began to wear away; and the twelve</p> <p>came, and said unto him,</p>	<p>5 When Jesus then lifted up <i>his</i> eyes, and saw a great company come unto him,</p>

<p>Matt. 14</p>	<p>Mark 6</p>	<p>Luke 9</p>	<p>John 6</p>
<p>time is already past; send the mul- titudes away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves food. 16 But Jesus said unto them,</p> <p>They have no need to go a- way; give ye them to eat.</p>	<p>day is now far spent; 36 send them away, that they may go into the coun- try and villages round about, and buy themselves some- what to eat. 37 But he answered and said unto them,</p> <p>Give ye them to eat. And</p> <p>they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred 'shillings' worth of bread, and give them to eat?</p>	<p>Send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages and coun- try round about, and lodge, and get provisions: for we are here in a desert place. 13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat.</p>	<p>he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy 'bread, that these may eat?' 6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do. 7 Philip answered him, Two hun- dred 'shillings' worth of 'bread is not sufficient for them, that every</p>

*In order to preserve grammatical continuity in the composite narrative, the Authorized Version of John 6:5 has been used.

Matt. 14	Mark 6	Luke 9	John 6
<p>17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes. 18 And he</p> <p style="text-align: right;">said, Bring them hither to me.</p>	<p>38 And he saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see.</p> <p>And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.</p>	<p>And they said, We have no more than five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy food for all this people. 14 For they were about five thousand men.</p>	<p>one may take a little.</p> <p>8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, 9 There is a lad here, who hath five barley loaves, and two fishes: but what are these among so many? 10 Jesus</p> <p style="text-align: right;">said, Make the people sit down.</p> <p>Now there was much grass in the place.</p>
<p>19 And he commanded the multitudes to sit down</p>	<p>39 And he commanded them that all should sit down by companies upon the green grass.</p> <p>40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and</p>	<p>And he said unto his disciples,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">Make them sit down in companies, about fifty each.</p> <p>15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.</p>	<p>So the men sat down, in</p>

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 14	Mark 6	Luke 9	John 6
on the grass; and he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake and gave	by fifties. 41 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to hea- ven, he blessed, and brake the	16 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and look- ing up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake;	number about five thousand. 11 Jesus therefore took the
the loaves to the dis- ciples, and the dis- ciples to the mul- titudes. 20 And	loaves; and he gave to the disciples to set before them; and the two fishes di- vided he among them all. 42 And they all ate,	and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.	loaves; and hav- ing given thanks, he distributed
they all ate,		17 And they ate,	to them that were set down; likewise also of the fishes
and were		and	as much as they would. 12 And when they were filled, he saith
filled: and they took	and were filled.	were all filled: and	unto his disciples, Gather up the
up that which re-	43 And they took up	there was taken up	broken pieces which remain
mained over of the		that which remained	over, that nothing be lost. 13 So they
broken pieces, twelve	broken pieces, twelve	over to them of	gathered them up, and filled twelve
baskets full.	basketfuls,	broken pieces, twelve baskets.	baskets with bro- ken pieces from the five barley loaves,
	and also of the fishes.		

Matt. 14	Mark 6	John 6
<p>²¹ And they that did eat were</p> <p>about five thousand men, besides women and children.</p>	<p>44 And they that ate the loaves were</p> <p>five thousand men.</p>	<p>which remained over unto them that had eaten.</p>

¹Or, by land. ²Gr. loaves. ³The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence
halipenny, or nearly seventeen cents. ⁴Gr. recline.

71. JESUS REJECTS POLITICAL KINGSHIP

North-east shore of the Sea of Galilee

Matt. 14:22-23	Mark 6:45-46	John 6:14-17a
<p>²² And straightway he</p> <p>constrained the disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side,</p>	<p>⁴⁵ And straightway</p> <p>he constrained his disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side</p>	<p>14 When therefore the people saw the 'sign which he did, they said, This is of a truth the prophet that cometh into the world. 15 Jesus therefore perceiving that they were about to come and take him by force, to make him king,</p> <p>withdrew again into the mountain himself</p>

Matt. 14	Mark 6 to Bethsaida,* while he him- self sendeth the multitude away. 46 And	John 6
till he should send the multi- tudes away.		alone. 16 And when evening came,
23 And after he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray: and when even was come, he was there alone.	after he had taken leave of them, he departed into the mountain to pray.	his disciples went down unto the sea; 17 and they entered into a boat, and were going over the sea unto Caper- naum.

*Some ancient authorities read *signs*.

72. JESUS WALKS ON THE WATER

The Sea of Galilee

Matt. 14:24-33

Mark 6:47-52

John 6:17b-21a

47 And when even
was come,

17b And it was
now dark, and

* This was evidently not Bethsaida Julias, but the other Bethsaida on the western shore of the Sea of Galilee, south of Capernaum, by the plain of Gennesaret (see sec. 73).

Matt. 14	Mark 6		John 6
<p>24 But</p> <p>the boat 'was now in the midst of the sea, distressed by the waves;</p> <p>for the wind was contrary. 25 And in the fourth watch of the night he came unto them, walking</p> <p>upon the sea. 26 And when the disciples</p>	<p>the boat was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.</p> <p>48 And</p> <p>seeing them dis- tressed in rowing, for the wind was contrary unto them, about the fourth watch of the night he com- eth unto them, walking</p> <p>on the sea;</p>		<p>Jesus</p> <p>had not yet come to them. 18 And the sea was rising by reason of a great wind that blew. 19 When therefore</p> <p>they</p> <p>had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they behold Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing</p>

Matt. 14	Mark 6	John 6
<p>saw him walking on the sea, they</p>	<p>and he would have passed by them: 49 but they, when they saw him walking on the sea,</p>	<p>nigh unto the boat:</p>
<p>were troubled, saying, It is a ghost; and they cried out for fear. 27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid. 28 And</p>	<p>supposed that it was a ghost, and cried out; 50 for they all saw him, and were troubled. But he straightway spake with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.</p>	<p>and they were afraid. 20 But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.</p>
<p>Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee upon the waters. 29 And he said, Come. And Peter went down from the boat, and walked upon the waters to come to Jesus. 30 But when he saw the wind, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying, Lord, save me. 31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took hold of him, and saith unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?</p>	<p>32 And when they were gone up into the boat, the wind</p>	<p>21 They were willing therefore to receive him into the boat:</p>
<p>ceased. 33 And they that were in the boat</p>	<p>51 And he went up unto them into the boat; and the wind</p>	
	<p>ceased:</p>	

Matt. 14
worshipped him
saying, Of a
truth thou art
the Son of God.

Mark 6

and they were
sore amazed in
themselves;⁵² for
they understood
not concerning
the loaves, but
their heart was
hardened.

¹Some ancient authorities read *was many furlongs distant from the land*.
read *and came*. ²Many ancient authorities add *strong*.

²Some ancient authorities

73. CROWDS HEALED AT GENNESARET

The western shore of the Sea of Galilee

Matt. 14:34-36
34 And when they
had crossed over,
they came to the
land, unto Gennesa-
ret.

35 And when
the men

Mark 6:53-55
53 And when they
had 'crossed over,
they
came to
the land unto
Gennesaret,

and
moored to the
shore. 54 And
when they
were come out
of the boat,

John 6:21b
21b and

straight-
way the boat

was at the land

whither they were
going.

<p>Matt. 14</p> <p>of that place knew him, they</p> <p>sent into all that region round about, and brought unto him</p> <p>all that were sick;</p> <p>36 and they besought him that they might only touch the border of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.</p>	<p>Mark 6</p> <p>straightway <i>the people</i></p> <p>knew him,</p> <p>55 and ran round about that whole region, and</p> <p>be- gan to carry about</p> <p>on their 'beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.</p>	
---	---	--

¹Or, crossed over to the land, they came unto Gennesaret. ²Or, pallets.

74. THE DISCOURSE ON THE BREAD OF LIFE

The Synagogue in Capernaum

<p>other side of the sea saw that there was no other 'boat there, save one, and that Jesus entered not with his disciples into the boat, but <i>that</i> his disciples</p>	<p>John 6:22-71</p> <p>22 On the morrow the multitude that stood on the</p>
--	---

went away alone

23 (howbeit there

came boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they ate the bread after the Lord had given thanks): 24 when the multitude therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they themselves got into the boats, and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus. 25 And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? 26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw signs, but because ye ate of the loaves, and were filled. 27 Work not for the food which perisheth, but for the food which abideth unto eternal life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him the Father, *even* God, hath sealed. 28 They said therefore unto him, What must we do, that we may work the works of God? 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent. 30 They said therefore unto him, What then doest thou for a sign, that we may see, and believe thee? what workest thou? 31 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, He gave them bread out of heaven to eat [Ex. 16:4,15]. 32 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, It was not Moses that gave you the bread out of heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread out of heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which cometh down out of heaven, and giveth life unto the world. 34 They said therefore unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. 35 Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall not hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. 36 But I said unto you, that ye have seen me, and yet believe not. 37 All that which the Father giveth me shall come unto me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. 38 For I am come down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 39 And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. 40 For this is the will of my Father, that every one that beholdeth the Son, and believeth on him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews therefore murmured concerning him, because he said, I am the bread which came down out of heaven. 42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how doth he now say, I am come down out of heaven? 43 Jesus answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. 44 No man can come to me, except the Father that sent me draw him; and I will raise him up in the

John 6

last day. 45 It is
written in the

prophets, And they shall all be taught of God [Is. 54:13]. Every one that hath heard from the Father, and hath learned, cometh unto me. 46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he that is from God, he hath seen the Father. 47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth hath eternal life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your fathers ate the manna in the wilderness, and they died. 50 This is the bread which cometh down out of heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down out of heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: yea and the bread which I will give is my flesh, for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove one with another, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat? 53 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, ye have not life in yourselves. 54 He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For my flesh is 'meat indeed, and my blood is 'drink indeed. 56 He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood abideth in me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father; so he that eateth me, he also shall live because of me. 58 This is the bread which came down out of heaven: not as the fathers ate, and died; he that eateth this bread shall live for ever. 59 These things said he in 'the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they heard *this*, said, This is a hard saying; who can hear 'it? 61 But Jesus knowing in himself that his disciples murmured at this, said unto them, Deth this cause you to stumble? 62 What then if ye should behold the Son of man ascending where he was before? 63 It is the spirit that giveth life; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you are spirit, and are life. 64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who it was that should 'betray him. 65 And he said, For this cause have I said unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it be given unto him of the Father.

66 Upon this many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. 67 Jesus said therefore unto the twelve, Would ye also go away? 68 Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou 'hast the words of eternal life. 69 And we have believed and know that thou art the

John 6
Holy One of God.
70 Jesus answered

them, Did not I choose you the twelve, and one of you is a devil? 71 Now he spake of Judas *the son* of Simon Iscariot, for he it was that should ⁷betray him, *being* one of the twelve.

¹Gr. little boat. ²Gr. little boats. ³Or, he sent. ⁴Or, that I should raise him up. ⁵Gr. true meat. ⁶Gr. true drink. ⁷Or, a synagogue. ⁸Or, him. ⁹Or, deliver him up. ¹⁰Or hast words.

75. ANOTHER CONTROVERSY WITH THE PHARISEES BECAUSE THE DISCIPLES EAT WITH UNWASHED HANDS

Matt. 15:1-20

Mark 6:56-7:23

John 7:1

1 And after these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Judæa, because the Jews sought to kill him.

56 And whosoever he entered, into villages, or into cities, or into the country, they

laid the sick in the market-places, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ¹him were made whole.

1 Then there came to Jesus from Jerusalem Pharisees and

1 And there are gathered together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the

Matt. 15

Mark 7

scribes,

scribes, who had
come from Jeru-
salem, 2 and had

seen that some of his disciples ate their bread with ²defiled, that is, unwashen, hands. 3 (For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands ³diligently, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders; 4 and *when they come* from the marketplace, except they ⁴bathe themselves, they eat not; and many other things there are, which they have received to hold, ⁵washings of cups, and pots, and brasen vessels⁶.) 5 And the Pharisees

saying, 2

Why do thy dis-
ciples transgress
the tradition of
the elders?

and the scribes
ask him, Why
walk not thy dis-
ciples according
to the tradition
of the elders, but
eat their bread
with ²defiled
hands?

for
they wash not
their hands when
they eat bread.
3 And he answer-
ed and said unto
them, 7 Ye hypo-
crites, well did
Isaiah prophesy
of you, saying,

8 This people hon-
oreth me with
their lips;

But their heart is
far from me.

9 But in vain do

6 And he

said unto them, Well
did Isaiah prophesy
of you hypocrites,

as it is written,
This people
honoreth me
with their
lips,

But their
heart is far
from me.

7 But in vain

<p>Matt. 15 they worship me, Teaching <i>as their</i> doctrines the precepts of men. 3b Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God because of your tradition? 4 For God said, Honor thy fa- ther and thy mother: and, He that speak- eth evil of father or mother, let him 'die the death. 5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, That wherewith thou mightest have</p>	<p>Mark 7 do they wor- ship me, Teaching as <i>their</i> doc- trines the precepts of men [Is. 29:13]. 8 Ye leave the commandment of God, and hold fast the tradition of men. 9 And he said unto them, Full well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your tradition. 10 For Moses said, Hon- or thy father and thy mother [Ex. 20:12]; and, He that speaketh evil of father or mother, let him 'die the death [Ex. 21:17]: 11 but ye say, If a man shall say to his father or his mother, That wherewith thou mightest have</p>
--	--

Matt. 15

been
 profited by me is
 given to God; 6 he
 shall not honor his
 father⁹. And ye have
 made void the ⁹word
 of God because of
 your tradition.
 10 And he called to
 him the multitude,
 and said unto them,
 Hear, and under-
 stand: 11 Not that
 which entereth
 into the mouth
 defileth the
 man; but that
 which proceedeth
 out
 of the mouth,
 this defileth the man.

12 Then came the
 disciples,

Mark 7

been profited by
 me is Corban,
 that is to say,
 Given to God;
 12 ye no longer
 suffer him to do
 aught for his
 father or his
 mother; 13 mak-
 ing void the
 word of God by
 your tradition,
 which ye have
 delivered: and
 many such like
 things ye do. 14
 And he called to
 him the multi-
 tude again, and
 said unto them,
 Hear me all of
 you, and under-
 stand: 15 there
 is nothing from
 without the man,
 that going

into him
 can defile him;
 but the things
 which proceed out

of the man are
 those that defile
 the man.¹⁰

17 And

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 15	Mark 7		
	when he was entered into the house from the multitude,		
and said unto him, Know-			
est thou that the Pharisees were "offended, when they heard this saying? 13 But he answered and said, Every "plant which my heavenly Father planted not, shall be rooted up. 14 Let them alone: they are blind guides. And if the blind guide the blind, both shall fall into a pit. 15 And Peter			
answered and said unto him, Declare unto us the parable. 16 And he said, Are ye also even yet without understanding? 17 Perceive ye	his disciples asked of him the parable. 18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Perceive ye		
not, that whatsoever	not, that whatsoever		
goeth into the mouth	soever from with-		
passeth into the belly,	out goeth into the		
and is cast out into	man, it cannot		
the draught?	defile him; 19		
	because it goeth		
	not into his heart,		
	but into his belly,		
	and goeth out into		
	the draught?		
	<i>This he said,</i>		
	making all meats		
	clean. 20 And he		
	said,		
18 But	That which		
the things which	proceedeth out of		
proceed out of			
the mouth come			

Matt. 15
forth out of the
heart; and they
defile the man.

19 For out of the heart come forth evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts,

false witness,
 railings:

20 these
 are the things
 which defile the
 man; but to eat
 with unwashen
 hands defileth not
 the man.

Mark 7
 the man, that
 defileth the man.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men,
 13 evil thoughts
 proceed, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries,
 22 covetings, wickednesses, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye,

railing, pride, foolishness: 23
 all these evil things proceed from within, and

defile the man.

¹Or, *it*. ²Or, *common*. ³Or, *up to the elbow*. Gr. *with the fist*. ⁴Gr. *baptize*. Some ancient authorities read *sprinkle themselves*. ⁵Gr. *baptizings*. ⁶Many ancient authorities add *and couches*. ⁷Or, *surely die*. ⁸Some ancient authorities add *or his mother*. ⁹Some ancient authorities read *law*. ¹⁰Many ancient authorities insert *ver*. 16 *If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear*. See ch. iv. 9, 23. ¹¹Gr. *caused to stumble*. ¹²Gr. *planting*. ¹³Gr. *thoughts that are evil*.

B. THE SECOND RETIREMENT NORTH-WESTWARD TO THE REGION OF TYRE AND SIDON, AND EASTWARD TO DECAPOLIS

76. HEALING THE SYROPHŒNICIAN WOMAN'S DAUGHTER

The region of Tyre and Sidon

Matt. 15:21-28

21 And Jesus
went out thence,
and withdrew

into the parts
of Tyre and Sidon.
22 And

behold,
a Canaanitish
woman

came out
from those bor-
ders,

and cried,
saying, Have mer-
cy on me, O Lord,

Mark 7:24-30

24 And from
thence he arose,
and went away

into the borders
of Tyre and
Sidon. And he
entered into a
house, and would
have no man know
it; and he could
not be hid. 25 But
straightway

a

woman, whose lit-
tle daughter had
an unclean spirit,
having heard
of him,

came

and fell down at
his feet.

Matt. 15
thou son of David;
my daughter is
grievously vexed
with a demon.

Mark 7

26 Now
the woman was
a ²Greek, a Syro-
phœnician by
race. And she
besought him that
he would cast
forth the demon
out of her daugh-
ter.

23 But he ans-
wered her not a
word. And his

disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth
after us. 24 But he answered and said, I was not sent but unto the lost
sheep of the house of Israel. 25 But she came and worshipped him,
saying, Lord, help

me. 26 And he
answered and
said,

It is not meet
to take the children's
³bread and cast it to
the dogs. 27 But she
said,

Yea, Lord:
for even the dogs

27 And he

said unto her,
Let the children
first be filled:
for it is not
meet to take the
children's ³bread
and cast it to
the dogs. 28
But she answered
and saith unto
him,

Yea, Lord;
even the dogs

Matt. 15	Mark 7
eat of the	under the table eat of the children's
<p>crumbs which fall from their masters' table. 28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it done unto thee even as thou wilt.</p>	<p>crumbs. 29</p> <p>And he said unto her,</p>
<p>And her daughter was healed from that hour.</p>	<p>For this saying go thy way; the demon is gone out of thy daughter.</p>
	<p>30 And she went away unto her house, and found the child laid upon the bed, and the demon gone out.</p>

¹Some ancient authorities omit *and Sidon*. ²Or, *Gentile*. ³Or, *loaf*.

77. HEALING THE DEAF MAN WITH THE IMPEDIMENT IN HIS SPEECH AND MANY OTHERS IN DECAPOLIS

Matt. 15:29-31
29 And Jesus
departed thence,
and

came nigh
unto the sea
of Galilee;

and
he went up into
the mountain, and
sat there.

Mark 7:31-37
31 And again he

went out from the
borders of Tyre,
and came through
Sidon unto the
sea of Galilee,
through the
midst of the
borders of De-
capolis.

32 And
they bring unto
him one that was

deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to lay his hand upon him. 33 And he took him aside from the multitude privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat, and touched his tongue; 34 and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. 35 And his ears were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. 36 And he charged them that they should

tell no man: but
the more he
charged them, so
much the more

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

<p>Matt. 15</p> <p>30 And there came unto him great mul-</p>	<p>Mark 7</p> <p>a great deal they published it.</p>		
<p>titudes, having with them the lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and they cast them down at his feet; and he healed them: 31 insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, and the lame walking, and the blind seeing: and they glorified the God of Israel.</p>			
	<p>37 And they were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well; he maketh even the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.</p>		

78. FEEDING THE FOUR THOUSAND

Decapolis

<p>Matt. 15:32-39a</p> <p>32 And Jesus called</p>	<p>Mark 8:1-9</p> <p>1 In those days, when there was again a great multitude, and they had nothing to eat, he called</p>
---	--

Matt. 15

unto him his disciples, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days and have nothing to eat: and I would not send them away fasting, lest haply they faint on the way. 33 And the disciples say unto him, Whence should we

have so many loaves in a desert place as to fill so great a multitude? 34 And Jesus said unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes. 35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground; 36 and he took

Mark 8

unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, 2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: 3 and if I send them away fasting to their home, they will faint on the way; and some of them are come from far. 4 And his disciples answered him, Whence shall one be able to

fill these men with 'bread here in a desert place? 5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven. 6 And he commandeth the multitude to sit down on the ground: and he took

Matt. 15

the seven loaves
and the fishes;
and he gave
thanks and brake,
and gave to the
disciples, and the
disciples to the
multitudes. 37
And they all ate,
and were filled:
and they took up
that which re-
mained over of
the broken pieces,
seven baskets
full. 38 And they
that did eat were

four thousand

men,
besides women
and children. 39
And he sent away
the multitudes,

Mark 8

the seven
loaves, and having
given thanks, he
brake, and gave to
his disciples, to set
before them; and
they set them before
the multitude. 7 And
they had a few small
fishes: and having
blessed them, he com-
manded to set these
also before them. 8
And they ate, and
were filled: and they
took up, of broken
pieces that remained
over, seven baskets.
9 And they were

about four thou-
sand:

and he sent
them away.

¹Gr. loaves.

79. A BRIEF VISIT ACROSS THE LAKE — THE PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES ASK FOR A SIGN

Dalmanutha or Magadan in Galilee

Matt. 15:39b-16:4

39b and entered
into the boat,

Mark 8:10-13a

10 And straight-
way he entered
into the boat

Matt. 15-16	Mark 8		
and came	with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.		
into the borders of Magadan. 1 And the Pharisees and Sadducees came,	11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him,		
and trying him asked him to show them a sign from heaven. 2 But he answered and said unto	seeking of him a sign from heaven, trying him.		
them, 'When it is evening, ye say, <i>It will be fair weather</i> : for the heaven is red. 3 And in the morning, <i>It will be foul weather to-day</i> : for the heaven is red and lowering. Ye know how to discern the face of the heaven; but ye cannot discern the signs of the times.			
4 An	12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this		
evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be	generation seek a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be		
given unto it, but the sign of Jonah. And he	given unto this generation. 13 And he		

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 16
left them, and
departed.

Mark 8
left them,

The following words, to the end of ver. 3, are omitted by some of the most ancient and other important authorities.

C. THE THIRD RETIREMENT TO BETHSAIDA
JULIAS AND CAESAREA PHILIPPI

80. AGAIN CROSSING THE LAKE, JESUS WARNS THE DISCIPLES
AGAINST THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES
AND CHIDES THEM FOR THEIR DULLNESS

Probably the north-east shore of the Sea of Galilee

Matt. 16:5-12
5 And the dis-
ciples

came to
the other side
and forgot to take
bread.

6 And Jesus
said unto them,
Take heed and be-
ware of the leaven

Mark 8:13b-21

13b and

again en-
tering into the
boat

departed to
the other side. 14
And they forgot
to take bread;
and they had not
in the boat with
them more than
one loaf.

15 And he
charged them,
saying, Take
heed, beware
of the leaven

Matt. 16
of the
**Pharisees
and Sadducees.**

7 And they

**reason-
ed among them-
selves,**

saying, "We
took no 'bread. 8
And Jesus perceiv-
ing it said,

**O ye
of little faith,
why reason ye a-
mong yourselves,
because ye have
no 'bread? 9
Do ye not yet**

perceive, neither re-

member the five
loaves of the five
thousand, and how
many 'baskets ye
took up?

Mark 8
of the
Pharisees
and the leaven of
Herod. 16 And
they

reasoned

one with another,
'saying, "We have
no bread. 17 And
Jesus perceiving
it saith unto
them,

Why reason
ye, because ye
have no bread?
do ye not yet

perceive, neither
understand? have
ye your heart
hardened? 18
Having eyes, see
ye not? and hav-
ing ears, hear ye
not? and do ye
not remember?
19 When I brake
the five loaves
among the five
thousand, how
many 'baskets
full of broken
pieces took ye

Matt. 16	Mark 8		
<p>10 Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many ⁴baskets ye took up?</p>	<p>up? They say unto him, Twelve. 20 And when the seven among the four thousand, how many ¹basketfuls of broken pieces took ye up? And they say unto him, Seven. 21 And he said unto them, Do ye not yet understand?</p>		
<p>11 How is it that ye do not</p>	<p>perceive that I spake not to you concerning ³bread? But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 12 Then understood they that he bade them not beware of the leaven of ³bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.</p>		

¹Some ancient authorities read *because they had no bread*.

²Or, *It is because we have no bread*.

³Gr. *loaves*.

⁴*Basket* in ver. 19 and 20 (also in Matt. ver. 9 and 10) represents different Greek words.

81. JESUS HEALS A BLIND MAN AT BETHSAIDA JULIAS

Mark 8:22-26

22 And they come
unto Bethsaida.
And they bring

to him a blind man, and beseech him to touch him. 23 And he took hold of the blind man by the hand, and brought him out of the village; and when he had spit on his eyes, and laid his hands upon him, he asked him, Seest thou aught? 24 And he looked up, and said, I see men; for I behold *them*

Mark 8
as trees, walking.
25 Then again he

laid his hands upon his eyes; and he looked stedfastly, and was restored, and saw all things clearly. 26 And he sent him away to his home, saying, Do not even enter into the village.

82. NEAR CÆSAREA PHILIPPI JESUS TESTS
THE TWELVE — PETER'S CONFESSION

Matt. 16:13-20	Mark 8:27-30	Luke 9:18-21
13 Now when Jesus came into the parts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Who do men say 'that	27 And Jesus went forth, and his disciples, into the villages of Cæsarea Philippi: and on the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Who do men say that I am? 28 And they told him, saying, John the Baptist; and others, Elijah; but others,	18 And it came to pass, as he was praying apart, the disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Who do the multitudes say that I am? 19 And they answering said, John the Baptist; but others say, Elijah; and others,
the Son of man is? 14 And they said, Some say John the Baptist; some, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah,		

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 16	Mark 8	Luke 9
<p>or one of the prophets. 15 He saith unto them, But who say ye that I am?</p>	<p>One of the prophets. 29 And he asked them, But who say ye that I am?</p>	<p>that one of the old prophets is risen again. 20 And he said unto them, But who say</p>
<p>16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.</p>	<p>Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.</p>	<p>ye that I am? And Peter answeringsaid, The Christ of God.</p>
<p>17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father who is in heaven. 18 And I also say unto thee, that thou art 'Peter, and upon this 'rock I will build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. 19 I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 20 Then charged he the disciples that they should tell no man that he was the Christ.</p>		
	<p>30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.</p>	<p>21 But he charged them, and commanded <i>them</i> to tell this to no man;</p>

¹Many ancient authorities read *that I the Son of man am*. See Mk. 8, 27; Lk. 9, 18.

²Gr. *petra*.

²Gr. *Petros*.

83. JESUS FORETELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION AND THE COMING OF HIS KINGDOM

Matt. 16:21-28
21 From that time began Jesus to show unto his disciples, that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up. 22 And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall never be unto thee. 23 But

Mark 8:31-9:1
31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days* rise again. 32 And he spake the saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. 33 But

Luke 9:22-27
22 saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up. 23 And

* Note that Matthew and Luke say "the third day". See also sec. 87, and the foot-note under sec. 125.

Matt. 16	Mark 8	Luke 9
<p>he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee</p>	<p>he turning about, and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter, and saith, Get thee</p>	
<p>behind me, Satan: thou art a stumbling-block unto me: for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men.</p>	<p>behind me, Satan; for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men.</p>	
	<p>34 And he called unto him the multitude with his disciples, and</p>	
<p>24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever would save his life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall find it. 26 For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world,</p>	<p>said unto them, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 35 For whosoever would save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the 'gospel's shall save it. 36 For what doth it profit a man, to gain the whole world,</p>	<p>he said unto all, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24 For whosoever would save his life shall lose</p> <p>it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. 25 For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world,</p>

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 16	Mark 8-9	Luke 9
and	and forfeit his	and
forfeit his life? or	life? 37 For what	lose or forfeit his
what shall a man	should a man	own self? 26 For
give in exchange for	give in exchange	whosoever shall be
his life? 27 For	for his life? 38	ashamed of me and
the Son of man	For whosoever	of my words, of him
shall come in the	shall be ashamed	shall the Son of
glory of his Father	of me and of my	man be ashamed,
with his	words in this a-	when he cometh in
	dulterous and sin-	his own glory,
	ful generation, the	and the glory
	Son of man also	of the Father,
	shall be ashamed	and
	ed of him, when	
	he cometh in	
	the glory of his Fa-	
	ther	
	with the holy	
angels;	angels.	of the holy
and then shall he		angels. 27 But I tell
render unto every		you of a truth, There
man according		are some of them
to his 'deeds.		that stand here, who
	1 And he	shall in no wise taste
28 Verily I say unto	said unto them,	of death, till they see
you, There are some	Verily I say unto	the kingdom
of them that stand	you, There are	
here, who shall in no	some here of	
wise taste of death,	them that stand	
till they see the Son	by, who shall in	
	no wise taste of	
	death, till they	
	see the kingdom	

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 16 of man coming in his kingdom.	Mark 9 of God come with power.*	Luke 9 of God.
--	---------------------------------------	-------------------

¹Some ancient authorities read *Jesus Christ*.
⁴Gr. *doing*.

²Or, *God have mercy on thee*.

³Or, *good tidings*.

84. THE TRANSFIGURATION OF JESUS

Probably Mount Hermon

Matt. 17:1-8	Mark 9:2-8	Luke 9:28-36a
1 And after six days	2 And after six days	28 And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings, that
Jesus taketh with him	Jesus taketh with him Peter, and	he took with
Peter, and ¹ James,	¹ James, and John,	him Peter and John
and John his brother,	and bringeth them up into	and James, and went
and bringeth them	a high moun- tain apart by themselves:	up into the mountain
up into a high moun-		to pray. 29 And as he was praying, the fashion of his countenance was altered,
tain apart: 2 and he		
was transfigured be-	and	
fore them;	he was trans- figured before them;	

* Note the slightly different wording of Matt. 16:28 and Luke 9:27.

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>and his face did shine as the sun, and</p> <p>his garments became white</p> <p>as the light.</p>	<p>3 and</p> <p>his garments be- came glistening, exceeding white, so as no fuller on earth can whiten them.</p>	<p>and his raiment <i>became</i> white and dazzling.</p>
<p>3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elijah talking with him.</p>	<p>4 And there appeared unto them</p> <p>Elijah with Moses:</p> <p>and they were talk- ing with Jesus.</p>	<p>30 And behold, there talked</p> <p>with him two men, who were Moses and Elijah; 31 who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he was about to ac-</p>
<p>4 And Peter answered, and said unto Jesus,</p> <p>Lord, it is good for us</p>	<p>5 And</p> <p>Peter an- swereth and saith to Jesus,</p> <p>Rabbi, it is good for us</p>	<p>the two men that stood with him. 33 And it came to pass, as they were parting from him,</p> <p>Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us</p>

comply at Jerusalem. 32 Now Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: but when they were fully awake, they saw his glory, and

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>to be here: if thou wilt, I will make here three 'tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.</p>	<p>to be here: and let us make three 'tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.</p>	<p>to be here: and let us make three 'tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: not knowing what he said.</p>
<p>5 While he was yet speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and</p>	<p>6 For he knew not what to answer; for they became sore afraid.</p>	
<p>5 While he was yet speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and</p>	<p>7 And there came a cloud overshadowing them: and</p>	<p>34 And while he said these things, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and</p>
<p>behold, a voice</p>	<p>there</p>	<p>they feared as they entered into the cloud. 35 And</p>
<p>out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. 6 And when</p>	<p>came a voice out of the cloud, This is my beloved Son: hear ye him.</p>	<p>a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is ⁵my Son, my chosen: hear ye him.</p>

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.</p> <p>7 And Jesus came and touched them and said, Arise, and be not afraid.</p> <p>8 And</p> <p>lifting up their eyes,</p> <p>they saw no one, save Jesus only.</p>	<p>8 And suddenly looking round about,</p> <p>they saw no one any more, save Jesus only with themselves.</p>	<p>36 And when the voice came,</p> <p>Jesus was found alone.</p>

¹Or, *Jacob*. ²Or, *departure*. ³Or, *having remained awake*. ⁴Or, *booths*. ⁵Many ancient authorities read *my beloved Son*. ⁶Or, *was past*.

85. THE PERPLEXITY OF THE THREE DISCIPLES ABOUT CHRIST'S REFERENCE TO HIS RESURRECTION AND ABOUT THE PROPHECY CONCERNING ELIJAH

On their way down the mountain

Matt. 17:9-13	Mark 9:9-13	Luke 9:36b
<p>9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them,</p> <p>say- ing, Tell the vision</p>	<p>9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things</p>	

Matt. 17

to no man, until
the Son of man
be risen from the
dead. 10 And

his
disciples ask-
ed him, saying,

Why then say
the scribes that
Elijah must first
come?

11 And
he answered and
said, Elijah indeed
cometh, and shall
restore all things:

12 but I say unto
you, that Elijah

is
come already,

Mark 9

they had seen,
save when the Son
of man should
have risen again
from the dead. 10
And they kept the
saying, question-
ing among them-
selves what the
rising again from
the dead should
mean. 11 And

they
asked him, saying,

*How is it that the
scribes say that
Elijah must first
come?*

12 And he

said unto them,
Elijah indeed
cometh first, and
restoreth all
things: and how
is it written of the
Son of man, that
he should suffer
many things and
be set at nought?

13 But I say
unto you, that
Elijah

is come,

Matt. 17
and they knew
him not, but did

unto him whatsoever
 they would.

Even
 so shall the Son
 of man also suffer
 of them. 13 Then
 understood the
 disciples that he
 spake unto them of
 John the Baptist.

Mark 9
 and
 they have also done
 unto him what-
 soever they
 would, even as it
 is written of
 him.

Luke 9

36b And they
 held their peace,
 and told no man
 in those days any
 of the things
 which they had
 seen.

¹Or, *The scribes say ... come.*

86. HEALING THE DEMONIAK BOY

The region of Cæsarea Philippi

Matt. 17:14-20

Mark 9:14-29

Luke 9:37-43a

14 And

37 And it came
 to pass, on the
 next day, when
 they were come
 down from the
 mountain,

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a man, kneeling to him, and saying,</p> <p>15 Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is epileptic, and suffereth griev-</p>	<p>when they came to the dis- ciples, they saw a great multitude about them, and scribes question- ing with them. 15 And straightway all the multitude, when they saw him, were great- ly amazed, and running to him saluted him. 16 And he asked them, What ques- tion ye with them?</p> <p>17 And one of the multitude</p> <p>answer- ed him, Teach- er, I brought unto thee my son, who hath a dumb spirit;</p>	<p>a great multitude met him.</p> <p>38 And behold, a man from the multitude</p> <p>saying, cried, Teacher,</p> <p>I beseech thee to look upon my son; for he is mine only child: 39 and</p>

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>ously; for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft-times into the water. 16 And</p>		
	<p>18 and where-soever it taketh him, it dasheth him down:</p>	<p>behold, a spirit taketh him,</p>
	<p>and</p>	<p>and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that</p>
	<p>he foameth, and grindeth his teeth, and pineth away:</p>	<p>he foameth,</p>
		<p>and it hardly departeth from him, bruising him sorely. 40 And</p>
<p>I brought him</p>	<p>and I</p>	<p>I</p>
<p>to thy disciples, and they</p>	<p>spake to thy disciples that they should</p>	<p>besought thy disciples to</p>
	<p>cast it out; and they</p>	<p>cast it out; and</p>
<p>could not cure him. 17 And Jesus answered and said, O faithless and</p>	<p>were not able. 19 And he answereth them and saith, O faithless</p>	<p>they could not. 41 And Jesus answered and said, O faithless and</p>

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him hither to me. 18 And	generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him unto me. 20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit 'tare him grievously; and he fell on the ground, and	perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and bear with you? bring hither thy son. 42 And as he was yet a coming, the demon 'dashed him down, and 'tare him grievously.

wallowed foaming. 21 And he asked his father, How long time is it since this hath come unto him? And he said, From a child. 22 And oft-times it hath cast him both into the fire and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do anything, have compassion on us, and help us. 23 And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst! All things are possible to him that believeth. 24 Straightway the father of the child cried out, and said^s, I believe; help thou mine unbelief. 25 And when Jesus saw that a multitude came

Jesus rebuked him;	running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I command thee, come out of him, and enter no more	But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit,
--------------------	---	---------------------------------------

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>and the demon went out of him: and</p>	<p>into him. 26 And having cried out, and 'torn him much, he came out: and <i>the boy</i> became as one dead; insomuch that the more part said, He is dead. 27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and raised him up; and he arose. 28 And</p>	
<p>the boy was cured from that hour.</p>		<p>and healed the boy, and [<i>he</i>] gave him back to his father. 43 And they were all astonished at the majesty of God.</p>
<p>19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart,</p>	<p>when he was come into the house,</p>	
<p>and said, Why could not we cast it out?</p>	<p>his disciples asked him privately, '<i>How is it</i> that we could not cast it out?</p>	
<p>20 And he saith unto them, Be-</p>		

Matt. 17
cause of your
little faith: for

verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.⁷

29 And he said
unto them, This
kind can come
out by nothing,
save by prayer⁸.

¹Or, rendeth him. See Mt. vii.9. ancient authorities add *with tears*.

²Or, convulseth.

³Or, rent him.

⁴Or, convulsed.

⁵Many

ancient authorities add *with tears*.

⁶Or, saying, *We could not cast it out.*

⁷Many authorities, some

ancient, insert ver. 21 *But this kind goeth not out save by prayer and fasting.* See Mk. ix.29.

⁸Many ancient

authorities add *and fasting*.

87. RETURNING INTO GALILEE, JESUS AGAIN FORETELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION

Matt. 17:22-23

Mark 9:30-32

Luke 9:43b-45

30 And

43b But while
all were marvel-
ling at all the
things which he
did,

they
went forth from
thence, and pass-
ed through Gali-
lee; and he would
not that any
man should know
it.

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 17	Mark 9	Luke 9
22 And while they 'abode in Galilee, Jesus	31 For he	
said unto them, The	taught his disciples, and said unto them,	he said unto his disciples,
Son of man shall		44 Let these words sink into your ears: for the Son of man shall be
be delivered up into	The	
the hands of men;	Son of man is	delivered up into the
23 and they shall	de-	hands of men. 45
kill him, and	livered up into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed,	But they understood not this saying, and
the	after three days he shall rise again.	it was concealed from them, that they
third day he shall be raised up. And they were exceeding sorry.	32 But they understood not the saying, and were afraid to ask him.	should not perceive it; and they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

¹Some ancient authorities read *were gathering themselves together*.

88. JESUS PAYS THE TEMPLE TAX WITH A SHEKEL FROM A FISH'S MOUTH

Capernaum

Matt. 17:24-27

Mark 9:33a

24 And when they
were come to
Capernaum, they
that received the
'half-shekel came

33 And they came
to Capernaum :

to Peter, and said, Doth not your teacher pay the 'half-shekel? 25 He saith, Yea. And when he came into the house, Jesus spake first to him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive toll or tribute? from their sons, or from strangers? 26 And when he said, From strangers, Jesus said unto him, Therefore the sons are free. 27 But, lest we cause them to stumble, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a 'shekel: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

¹Gr. *stater*.

89. JESUS REJECTS THE ADVICE OF HIS UNBELIEVING BROTHERS TO APPEAR AT ONCE IN JUDÆA

John 7:2-9

2 Now the feast
of the Jews, the
feast of taber-

nacles, was at hand. 3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judæa, that thy disciples also may behold thy works which thou doest. 4 For no man doeth anything in secret, 'and himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou doest these things, manifest thyself to the world.

John 7

5 For even his brethren did not

believe on him. 6 Jesus therefore saith unto them, My time is not yet come; but your time is always ready. 7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that its works are evil. 8 Go ye up unto the feast: I go not up² unto this feast; because my time is not yet fulfilled. 9 And having said these things unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

¹Some ancient authorities read *and seeketh it to be known openly*.
add *yet*.

²Many ancient authorities

90. JESUS REBUKES THE SELFISH AMBITION AND NARROWNESS OF THE DISCIPLES WITH A DISCOURSE ON THE NECESSITY FOR CHILDLIKENESS, TOLERANCE AND FORGIVENESS

Capernaum

Matt. 18:1-35

Mark 9:33^b-50

Luke 9:46-50

1 In that hour
came

the disciples

unto Jesus,

33^b and

when he
was in the house
he asked them,
What were ye
reasoning on the
way? 34 But they
held their peace:

46 And

there arose
a 'reasoning a-
mong
them,

which
of them was the
²greatest. 47 But
when Jesus saw
the 'reasoning of
their heart,

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 18	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>saying, Who then is ¹greatest in the kingdom of heaven?</p> <p>2 And</p> <p>he called to him a little child, and set him in the midst of them, 3 and said,</p> <p>Verily I say unto you, Except ye turn, and become</p>	<p>for they had disputed one with another on the way,</p> <p>who <i>was</i> the ²greatest.</p> <p>35 And he sat down, and called the twelve; and he saith unto them, If any man would be first, he shall be last of all, and ³servant of all. 36 And</p> <p>he took a little child, and set him in the midst of them: and taking him in his arms, he said unto them,</p>	<p>he took a little child, and set him by his side, 48 and said unto them,</p>
<p>as little children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.</p> <p>4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the ²greatest in the kingdom of heaven.</p> <p>5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my</p>	<p>37 Whosoever shall receive one of such little children in my</p>	<p>Whosoever shall receive this child in my</p>

THE INTENSIVE TRAINING OF THE TWELVE

Matt. 18	Mark 9	Luke 9
<p>name receiveth me:</p>	<p>name, receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.</p>	<p>name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him</p>
	<p>38 John said unto him, Teacher, we saw one casting out demons in thy</p>	<p>that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same is great.</p>
	<p>name; and we forbade him, because he followed not us. 39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man who shall do a mighty work in my name, and be able quickly to speak evil of me. 40 For he that is not against us is for us. 41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, because ye are Christ's, verily I</p>	<p>49 And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out demons in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. 50 But Jesus said unto him, Forbid <i>him</i> not: for he that is not against you is for you.</p>

Matt. 18

6 but
whoso shall cause
one of these little
ones that believe
on me to stumble,
it is profitable for
him that ^a great
millstone should
be hanged about
his neck, and *that*
he should be sunk
in the depth of the
sea.

7 Woe unto
the world because
of occasions of
stumbling! for
it must needs
be that the oc-
casions come; but
woe to that man
through whom
the occasion
cometh! 8 And

if thy hand or thy
foot causeth thee to
stumble, cut it

off,
and cast it
from thee: it is
good for thee
to enter into life
maimed

Mark 9

say unto you,
he shall in no
wise lose his re-
ward.

42 And who-
soever shall cause
one of these little
ones that believe
on me to stumble,
it were better for
him if ^a great mill-
stone were hanged
about his neck, and
he were cast into
the sea

43 And
if thy hand cause
thee to stumble,
cut it

off: it
is good for thee

to enter into life
maimed, rather

Matt. 18

Mark 9

or halt,
rather than having
two hands or two feet
to be cast

into
the eternal fire.
9 And if thine
eye causeth thee
to stumble, pluck
it out, and cast
it from thee: it
is good for thee
to enter into
life with one
eye, rather than

having two eyes
to be cast into
the "hell of fire.

than having thy
two hands to go
into "hell, into the
unquenchable
fire.¹⁰ 45 And if
thy foot cause
thee to stumble,
cut it off: it is
good for thee to
enter into life
halt, rather than
having thy two
feet to be cast
into "hell.

47 And
if thine eye cause
thee to stumble, cast
it out: it is good
for thee to enter
into the kingdom
of God with one
eye, rather than

having two eyes
to be cast into
"hell; 48 where
their worm dieth
not, and the fire

is not quenched. 49 For every one shall be salted with fire¹². 50 Salt is
good: but if the salt have lost its saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have

salt in yourselves,
and be at peace
one with another.

10 See that ye
despise not one

Matt. 18
of these little
ones: for I say

unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father who is in heaven.¹² How think ye? if any man have a hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and go unto the mountains, and seek that which goeth astray? ¹³ And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth over it more than over the ninety and nine which have not gone astray. ¹⁴ Even so it is not "the will of "your Father who is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

¹⁵ And if thy brother sin "against thee, go, show him his fault between thee and him alone: if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. ¹⁶ But if he hear *thee* not, take with thee one or two more, that at the mouth of two witnesses or three every word may be established. ¹⁷ And if he refuse to hear them, tell it unto the "church: and if he refuse to hear the "church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the publican. ¹⁸ Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. ¹⁹ Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it "shall be done for them of my Father who is in heaven. ²⁰ For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

²¹ Then came Peter and said to him, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? until seven times? ²² Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but, Until ¹⁹seventy times seven. ²³ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, who would make a reckoning with his ²⁰servants. ²⁴ And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, that owed him ten thousand ²¹talents. ²⁵ But forasmuch as he had not *wherewith* to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. ²⁶ The ²²servant therefore fell down and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ²⁷ And the lord of that ²²servant, being moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the ²³debt. ²⁸ But that ²²servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him a hundred ²⁴shillings: and he laid hold on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay what thou owest, ²⁹ So his fellow-servant fell down and besought him, saying, Have

Matt. 18

patience with me,
and I will pay

thee. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay that which was due. 31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were exceeding sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord called him unto him, and saith to him, Thou wicked ²²servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou besoughtest me: 33 shouldest not thou also have had mercy on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee? 34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due. 35 So shall also my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother from your hearts.

¹Or, questioning. ²Gr. greater. ³Or, minister. ⁴Gr. lesser. ⁵Gr. power. ⁶Gr. in name that ye are. ⁷Many ancient authorities omit on me. ⁸Gr. a millstone turned by an ass. ⁹Gr. Gehenna. ¹⁰Ver. 44 and 46 (which are identical with ver. 48) are omitted by the best ancient authorities. ¹¹Gr. Gehenna of fire. ¹²Many ancient authorities add and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. See Lev. ii. 13. ¹³Many authorities, some ancient, insert ver. 11 For the Son of man came to save that which was lost. See Lk. xix. 10. ¹⁴Gr. a thing willed before your Father. ¹⁵Some ancient authorities read my. ¹⁶Some ancient authorities omit against thee. ¹⁷Or, congregation. ¹⁸Gr. shall become. ¹⁹Or, seventy times and seven. ²⁰Gr. bondservants. ²¹This talent was probably worth about £200 or \$1000. ²²Gr. bondservant. ²³Gr. loan. ²⁴The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence half-penny, or nearly seventeen cents.

91. WHILE GOING PRIVATELY THROUGH SAMARIA TO THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES AT JERUSALEM, JESUS REBUKES THE MISTAKEN ZEAL OF JAMES AND JOHN

Luke 9:51-56

John 7:10

51 And it came
to pass, when
the days were
well-nigh come
that he should
be received up,

¹⁰ But

when his
brethren were

		Luke 9	John 7
		he stedfastly set his face to go	gone up unto the feast, then went he
		to Jerusalem,	also up,
		52 and [he] sent messengers be- fore his face: and	not pub- licly, but as it were in secret.

they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. 53 And they did not receive him, because his face was *as though he were* going to Jerusalem. 54 And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we bid fire to come down from heaven, and consume them¹? 55 But he turned, and rebuked them². 56 And they went to another village.

¹Gr. *were being fulfilled*. ²Many ancient authorities add *even as Elijah did*. Comp. 2 K. i. 10-12.

³Many ancient authorities add *and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of*. Some, but fewer, add *also For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives but to save them*. Comp. ch. xix. 10; Jn. iii. 17; xii. 47.

92. IN REPLY TO THE EXCUSES OF THREE WOULD-BE FOLLOWERS, JESUS DEMANDS COMPLETE RENUNCIATION

Samaria or Judæa

Matt. 8:19-22	Luke 9:57-62
19 And	57 And as they went on the way,
there came 'a scribe, and said unto him, Teacher, I will follow thee whithersoever thou go-	a certain man said unto him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

Matt. 8

est. 20 And Jesus
saith unto him,

The foxes have holes, and the birds
of the heaven *have* ² nests; but the
Son of man hath not

head. 21 And

another of the disciples

said unto him, Lord, suffer me first
to go and bury my father.

22 But

Jesus saith unto him, Follow me;
and leave the dead to bury their

own dead.

follow thee, Lord; but first suffer me to bid farewell to them that are at
my house. 62 But Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the
plow, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

¹Gr. one scribe. ²Gr. lodging-places.

Luke 9

58 And Jesus said
unto him, The foxes

have holes, and the birds of the heaven
have ² nests; but the Son of man hath not

where to lay his head. 59 And he
said unto

another,

Follow me. But

he said, Lord, suffer me first to go
and bury my father.

60 But he said
unto him, Leave the dead to bury their

own dead; but go thou and pub-
lish abroad the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said, I will

PART VIII

THE LATER JUDEAN MINISTRY

OCTOBER TO DECEMBER, PROBABLY A. D. 29

93. AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES JESUS ASSERTS HIS MESSIAHSHIP IN A GREAT DISCOURSE

The Temple, Jerusalem

John 7:11-52

11 The Jews there-
fore sought him
at the feast, and

said, Where is he? 12 And there was much murmuring among the multitudes concerning him: some said, He is a good man; others said, Not so, but he leadeth the multitude astray. 13 Yet no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

14 But when it was now the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. 15 The Jews therefore marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? 16 Jesus therefore answered them, and said, My teaching is not mine, but his that sent me. 17 If any man willet to do his will, he shall know of the teaching, whether it is of God, or *whether* I speak from myself. 18 He that speaketh from himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. 19 Did not

John 7

Moses give you
the law, and yet

none of you doeth the law? Why seek ye to kill me? 20 The multitude answered, Thou hast a demon: who seeketh to kill thee? 21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I did one work, and ye all marvel because thereof. 22 Moses hath given you circumcision (not that it is of Moses, but of the fathers); and on the sabbath ye circumcise a man. 23 If a man receiveth circumcision on the sabbath, that the law of Moses may not be broken; are ye wroth with me, because I made 'a man every whit whole on the sabbath? 24 Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

25 Some therefore of them of Jerusalem said, Is not this he whom they seek to kill? 26 And lo, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing unto him. Can it be that the rulers indeed know that this is the Christ? 27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when the Christ cometh, no one knoweth whence he is. 28 Jesus therefore cried in the temple, teaching and saying, Ye both know me, and know whence I am; and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. 29 I know him; because I am from him, and he sent me. 30 They sought therefore to take him: and no man laid his hand on him, because his hour was not yet come. 31 But of the multitude many believed on him; and they said, When the Christ shall come, will he do more signs than those which this man hath done? 32 The Pharisees heard the multitude murmuring these things concerning him; and the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to take him. 33 Jesus therefore said, Yet a little while am I with you, and I go unto him that sent me. 34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come. 35 The Jews therefore said among themselves, Whither will this man go that we shall not find him? will he go unto the Dispersion 'among the Greeks, and teach the Greeks? 36 What is this word that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me; and where I am, ye cannot come?

37 Now on the last day, the great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink. 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, 'from within him shall flow rivers of living water. 39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him were to receive: 'for the Spirit was not yet *given*; because Jesus was not yet glorified. 40 *Some* of the multitude therefore, when they

John 7

heard these words, said, This

is of a truth the prophet. 41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, What, doth the Christ come out of Galilee? 42 ¹Hath not the scripture said that the Christ cometh of the seed of David, and from Bethlehem, the village where David was? 43 So there arose a division in the multitude because of him. 44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

45 The officers therefore came to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why did ye not bring him? 46 The officers answered, Never man so spake. 47 The Pharisees therefore answered them, Are ye also led astray? 48 Hath any of the rulers believed on him, or of the Pharisees? 49 But this multitude that knoweth not the law are accursed. 50 Nicodemus saith unto them (he that came to him before, being one of them), 51 Doth our law judge a man, except it first hear from himself and know what he doeth? 52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and 'see that out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

¹Gr. *a whole man sound*.
he Holy Spirit was not yet given.

²Gr. *of*.

³Gr. *out of his belly*.

⁴Some ancient authorities read for

⁵*2 S. vii. 12 ff; Mic. v. 2.* ⁶Or, *see: for out of Galilee &c.*

94. THE ADULTERESS BROUGHT TO JESUS

The Temple, Jerusalem

John 7:53-8:11

53 ¹And they went every man unto his own house:

1 but Jesus went unto the mount of Olives. 2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them. 3 And the scribes and the Pharisees bring a woman taken in adultery; and having set her in the midst, 4 they say unto him, Teacher, this woman hath been taken in adultery, in the very act. 5 ²Now in the law Moses commanded us to stone such: what then sayest thou of her? 6 And this they said, trying him, that they might have *whereof* to

John 8

accuse him. But
Jesus stooped

down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 7 But when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. 8 And again he stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 9 And they, when they heard it, went out one by one, beginning from the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman, where she was, in the midst. 10 And Jesus lifted up himself, and said unto her, Woman, where are they? did no man condemn thee? 11 And she said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said, Neither do I condemn thee: go thy way; from henceforth sin no more.

¹Most of the ancient authorities omit John vii. 53-viii. 11. Those which contain it vary much from each other. ²Lev. xx. 10; Dt. xxxii. 22 f.

95. BY CLAIMING TO BE THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD, JESUS
ANGERS THE PHARISEES — WHEN HE EXPOSES THEIR
SINFULNESS, THEY ATTEMPT TO STONE HIM

The Temple, Jerusalem

John 8:12-59

12 Again there-
fore Jesus spake
unto them, say-

ing, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life. 13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest witness of thyself; thy witness is not true. 14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Even if I bear witness of myself, my witness is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye know not whence I come, or whither I go. 15 Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. 16 Yea and if I judge, my judgment is true; for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. 17 Yea and in your law it is written, 'that the witness of two men is true. 18 I am he that beareth witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me. 19 They said therefore unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye know neither me, nor

my Father: if ye
knew me, ye

would know my Father also. 20 These words spake he in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man took him; because his hour was not yet come.

21 He said therefore again unto them, I go away, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sin: whither I go, ye cannot come. 22 The Jews therefore said, Will he kill himself, that he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come? 23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. 24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for except ye believe that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. 25 They said therefore unto him, Who art thou? Jesus said unto them, 'Even that which I have also spoken unto you from the beginning. 26 I have many things to speak and to judge concerning you: howbeit he that sent me is true; and the things which I heard from him, these speak I unto the world. 27 They perceived not that he spake to them of the Father. 28 Jesus therefore said, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of myself, but as the Father taught me, I speak these things. 29 And he that sent me is with me; he hath not left me alone; for I do always the things that are pleasing to him. 30 As he spake these things, many believed on him.

31 Jesus therefore said to those Jews that had believed him, If ye abide in my word, *then* are ye truly my disciples; 32 and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 33 They answered unto him, We are Abraham's seed, and have never yet been in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? 34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Every one that committeth sin is the bondservant of sin. 35 And the bondservant abideth not in the house for ever: the son abideth for ever. 36 If therefore the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. 37 I know that ye are Abraham's seed; yet ye seek to kill me, because my word 'hath not free course in you. 38 I speak the things which I have seen with *'my* Father: and ye also do the things which ye heard from *your* father. 39 They answered and said unto him, Our father is Abraham. Jesus saith unto them, If ye *'were* Abraham's children, *'ye* would do the works of Abraham. 40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I heard from God: this did not Abraham. 41 Ye

John 8

do the works of
your father. They

said unto him, We were not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God. 42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I came forth and am come from God; for neither have I come of myself, but he sent me. 43 Why do ye not ¹understand my speech? *Even* because ye cannot hear my word. 44 Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father it is your will to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and standeth not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. ²When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. 45 But because I say the truth, ye believe me not. 46 Which of you convicteth me of sin? If I say truth, why do ye not believe me? 47 He that is of God heareth the words of God: for this cause ye hear *them* not, because ye are not of God. 48 The Jews answered and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a demon? 49 Jesus answered, I have not a demon; but I honor my Father, and ye dishonor me. 50 But I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. 51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my word, he shall never see death. 52 The Jews said unto him, Now we know that thou hast a demon. Abraham died, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my word, he shall never taste of death. 53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, who died? and the prophets died: whom makest thou thyself? 54 Jesus answered, If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing: it is my Father that glorifieth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God; 55 and ye have not known him: but I know him; and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be like unto you, a liar: but I know him, and keep his word. 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced ³to see my day; and he saw it, and was glad. 57 The Jews therefore said unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? 58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was born, I am. 59 They took up stones therefore to cast at him: but Jesus ⁴hid himself, and went out of the temple¹².

¹Comp. Dt. xix, 15; xvii, 6.²Or, *Altogether that which I also speak unto you.*³Or, *I am he:**and I do.* ⁴Or, *hath no place in you.*⁵Or, *the Father: do ye also therefore the things which ye heard from the Father.*⁶Gr. *are.*⁷Some ancient authorities read *ye do the works of Abraham.*⁸Or, *know.*⁹Or, *when one speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for his father also is a liar.*¹⁰Or, *that he should see.*¹¹Or, *was hidden, and went &c.*¹²Many ancient authorities add *and going through the midst of them went his way and so passed by.*

96. THE MAN BORN BLIND, HEALED ON THE SABBATH, CONFOUNDS AND ANGERS THE PHARISEES — JESUS ANSWERS THEM WITH THE ALLEGORY OF THE GOOD SHEPHERD

Jerusalem

John 9:1-10:21

1 And as he passed by, he saw a man blind from

his birth. 2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Rabbi, who sinned, this man, or his parents, that he should be born blind? 3 Jesus answered, Neither did this man sin, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. 4 We must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. 5 When I am in the world, I am the light of the world. 6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed his eyes with the clay, 7 and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent). He went away therefore, and washed, and came seeing. 8 The neighbors therefore, and they that saw him aforetime, that he was a beggar, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? 9 Others said, It is he: others said, No, but he is like him. He said, I am he. 10 They said therefore unto him, How then were thine eyes opened? 11 He answered, The man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to Siloam, and wash: so I went away and washed, and I received sight. 12 And they said unto him, Where is he? He saith, I know not.

13 They bring to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. 14 Now it was the sabbath on the day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Again therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he received his sight. And he said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and I see. 16 Some therefore of the Pharisees said, This man is not from God, because he keepeth not the sabbath. But others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such signs? And there was a division among them. 17 They say therefore unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, in that he opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a prophet.

John 9

18 The Jews there-
fore did not be-

lieve concerning him, that he had been blind, and had received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight, 19 and asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? 20 His parents answered and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 21 but how he now seeth, we know not; or who opened his eyes, we know not: ask him; he is of age; he shall speak for himself. 22 These things said his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man should confess him to be Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. 23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him. 24 So they called a second time the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give glory to God: we know that this man is a sinner. 25 He therefore answered, Whether he is a sinner, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. 26 They said therefore unto him, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? 27 He answered them, I told you even now, and ye did not hear; wherefore would ye hear it again? would ye also become his disciples? 28 And they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are disciples of Moses. 29 We know that God hath spoken unto Moses: but as for this man, we know not whence he is. 30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is the marvel, that ye know not whence he is, and yet he opened mine eyes. 31 We know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and do his will, him he heareth. 32 Since the world began it was never heard that anyone opened the eyes of a man born blind. 33 If this man were not from God, he could do nothing. 34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and finding him, he said, Dost thou believe on ²the Son of God? 36 He answered and said, And who is he, Lord, that I may believe on him? 37 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and he it is that speaketh with thee. 38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. 39 And Jesus said, For judgment came I into this world, that they that see not may see; and that they that see may become blind. 40 Those of the Pharisees who were with him heard these things, and said unto him, Are we also blind? 41 Jesus said unto

John 9-10
 them, If ye were
 blind, ye would

have no sin : But now ye say, We see : your sin remaineth.

1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the fold of the sheep, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 2 But he that entereth in by the door is ^{the} shepherd of the sheep. 3 To him the porter openeth ; and the sheep hear his voice : and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. 4 When he hath put forth all his own, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him : for they know his voice. 5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him : for they know not the voice of strangers. 6 This ^{parable} spake Jesus unto them : but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Jesus therefore said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. 8 All that came ^{before} me are thieves and robbers : but the sheep did not hear them. 9 I am the door ; by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and go out, and shall find pasture. 10 The thief cometh not, but that he may steal, and kill, and destroy : I came that they may have life, and may ^{have it} abundantly. 11 I am the good shepherd : the good shepherd layeth down his life for the sheep. 12 He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholdeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth, and the wolf snatcheth them, and scattereth *them* : 13 *he fleeth* because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep. 14 I am the good shepherd ; and I know mine own, and mine own know me, 15 even as the Father knoweth me, and I know the Father ; and I lay down my life for the sheep. 16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold : them also I must ^{bring}, and they shall hear my voice ; and ^{they} shall become one flock, one shepherd. 17 Therefore doth the Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I may take it again. 18 No one ^{take}th it away from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have ^{power} to lay it down, and I have ^{power} to take it again. This commandment received I from my Father.

19 There arose a division again among the Jews because of these words. 20 And many of them said, He hath a demon, and is mad ; why hear ye him ? 21 Others said, These are not the sayings of one possessed with

John 10
a demon. Can a
demon open the
eyes of the blind ?

¹Or, and with the clay thereof anointed his eyes. ²Many ancient authorities read *the Son of Man*.
³Or, a shepherd. ⁴Or, proverb. ⁵Some ancient authorities omit *before me*. ⁶Or, have abundance.
⁷Or, lead. ⁸Or, there shall be one flock. ⁹Some ancient authorities read *took it away*. ¹⁰Or, right.

97. JESUS INSTRUCTS THE SEVENTY AND SENDS THEM OUT BY TWOS — ON THEIR RETURN HE REJOICES IN THEIR WORK

Probably in Judæa

Luke 10:1-24

1 Now after these
things the Lord
appointed seven-

ty' others, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself was about to come. 2 And he said unto them, The harvest indeed is plenteous, but the laborers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth laborers into his harvest. 3 Go your ways; behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves. 4 Carry no purse, no wallet, no shoes; and salute no man on the way. 5 And into whatsoever house ye shall ²enter, first say, Peace be to this house. 6 And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon ³him: but if not, it shall turn to you again. 7 And in that same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the laborer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. 8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: 9 and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. 10 But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets thereof and say, 11 Even the dust from your city, that cleaveth to our feet, we wipe off against you: nevertheless know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh. 12 I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. 13 Woe unto

Luke 10
thee, Chorazin !
woe unto thee,

Bethsaida ! for if the 'mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which were done in you, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgment, than for you. 15 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt be brought down unto Hades. 16 He that heareth you heareth me; and he that rejecteth you rejecteth me; and he that rejecteth me rejecteth him that sent me.

17 And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject unto us in thy name. 18 And he said unto them, 'I beheld Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. 19 Behold, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall in any wise hurt you. 20 Nevertheless in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.

21 In that same hour he rejoiced 'in the Holy Spirit, and said, I 'thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: yea, Father; 'for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. 22 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth who the Son is, save the Father; and who the Father is, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal *him*. 23 And turning to the disciples, he said privately, Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things that ye see: 24 for I say unto you, that many prophets and kings desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not.

¹Many ancient authorities add *and two*: and so in ver. 17.

²Or, *enter first, say*.

³Or, *it*.

⁴Gr. *powers*.

⁵Or, *by*.

⁶Or, *praise*.

⁷Or, *that*.

98. JESUS ANSWERS A LAWYER'S QUESTIONS—THE
PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN

Luke 10:25-37

25 And behold, a certain lawyer stood up and
--

made trial of him, saying, Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 26 And he said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? 27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God 'with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind [Dt. 6:5]; and thy neighbor as thyself [Lev. 19:18]. 28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. 29 But he, desiring to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbor? 30 Jesus made answer and said, A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho; and he fell among robbers, who both stripped him and beat him, and departed, leaving him half dead. 31 And by chance a certain priest was going down that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. 32 And in like manner a Levite also, when he came to the place, and saw him, passed by on the other side. 33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he was moved with compassion, 34 and came to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring on *them* oil and wine; and he set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. 35 And on the morrow he took out two ²shillings, and gave them to the host, and said, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, I, when I come back again, will repay thee. 36 Which of these three, thinkest thou, proved neighbor unto him that fell among the robbers? 37 And he said, He that showed mercy on him. And Jesus said unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

¹Gr. *from*.²See marginal note on ch. vii. 41.

99. JESUS AT THE HOME OF MARTHA AND MARY

Bethany, near Jerusalem

Luke 10:38-42

38 Now as they
went on their way,
he entered into a

certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. 39 And she had a sister called Mary, who also sat at the Lord's feet, and heard his word. 40 But Martha was 'cumbered about much serving; and she came up to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister did leave me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. 41 But the Lord answered and said unto her, ²Martha, Martha, thou art anxious and troubled about many things: 42 ³but one thing is needful: for Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

¹Gr. *distracted*. ²A few ancient authorities read *Martha, Martha, thou art troubled; Mary hath chosen* &c. ³Many ancient authorities read *but few things are needful, or one*.

100. A DISCOURSE TO THE DISCIPLES ON PRAYER — THE PARABLE OF THE IMPORTUNATE FRIEND

Luke 11:1-13

1 And it came to
pass, as he was
praying in a cer-

tain place, that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples. 2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, 'Father, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come.' 3 Give us day by day 'our daily bread. 4 And forgive us our sins; for we ourselves also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And bring us not into temptation'.

Luke 11

5 And he said un-
to them, Which

of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me threes loaves; 6 for a friend of mine is come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him; 7 and he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee? 8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will arise and give him ⁵as many as he needeth. 9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 10 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. 11 And of which of you that is a father shall his son ask ⁶a loaf, and he give him a stone? or a fish, and he for a fish give him a serpent? 12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion? 13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

¹Many ancient authorities read *Our Father, who art in heaven*. See Mt. vi. 9. ²Many ancient authorities add *Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth*. See Mt. vi. 10. ³Gr. *our bread for the coming day*. Or, *our needful bread*: as in Mt. vi. 11. ⁴Many ancient authorities add *but deliver us from the evil one (or, from evil)*. See Mt. vi. 13. ⁵Or, *whatsoever things*. ⁶Some ancient authorities omit *a loaf, and he give him a stone? or*.

101. THE HEALING OF A DUMB DEMONIAK LEADS TO ANOTHER CLASH WITH THE PHARISEES

Luke 11:14-36

14 And he was
casting out a de-
mon that was

dumb. And it came to pass, when the demon was gone out, the dumb man spake; and the multitudes marvelled. 15 But some of them said, 'By

Luke 11

'Beelzebub the prince of the de-

mons casteth he out demons. 16 And others, trying *him*, sought of him a sign from heaven. 17 But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house *divided* against a house falleth. 18 And if Satan also is divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out demons 'by 'Beelzebub. 19 And if I 'by 'Beelzebub cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. 20 But if I by the finger of God cast out demons, then is the kingdom of God come upon you. 21 When the strong *man* fully armed guardeth his own court, his goods are in peace: 22 but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him his whole armor wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. 23 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth. 24 The unclean spirit when 'he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest, and finding none, 'he saith, I will turn back unto my house whence I came out. 25 And when 'he is come, 'he findeth it swept and garnished. 26 Then goeth 'he, and taketh *to him* seven other spirits more evil than 'himself; and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first.

27 And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bear thee, and the breasts which thou didst suck. 28 But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

29 And when the multitudes were gathering together unto him, he began to say, This generation is an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah. 30 For even as Jonah became a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. 31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, 'a greater than Solomon is here. 32 The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, 'a greater than Jonah is here.

Luke 11

33 No man, when he hath lighted

a lamp, putteth it in a cellar, neither under the bushel, but on the stand, that they which enter in may see the light. 34 The lamp of thy body is thine eye: when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when it is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. 35 Look therefore whether the light that is in thee be not darkness. 36 If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with its bright shining doth give thee light.

¹Or, in.²Gr. Docteebut.³Or, and house falleth upon house.⁴Or, it.⁵Or, itself.⁶Gr. more than.

102. JESUS CAUSES ASTONISHMENT BY DINING UNBATHED IN A PHARISEE'S HOUSE — HE AGAIN EXPOSES THEIR CEREMONIAL HYPOCRISY

Luke 11:37-12:12

37 Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to
--

'dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat. 38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first bathed himself before 'dinner. 39 And the Lord said unto him, Now ye the Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter; but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. 40 Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside also? 41 But give for alms those things which ²are within; and behold, all things are clean unto you.

42 But woe unto you Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and every herb, and pass over justice and the love of God: but these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. 43 Woe unto you Pharisees! for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues, and the salutations in the market-places. 44 Woe unto you! for ye are as the tombs which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* know it not.

Luke 11-12

45 And one of the
lawyers answer-

ing saith unto him, Teacher, in saying this thou reproachest us also. 46 And he said, Woe unto you lawyers also ! for ye load men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. 47 Woe unto you ! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. 48 So ye are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build *their tombs*. 49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and *some* of them they shall kill and persecute; 50 that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; 51 from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zachariah, who perished between the altar and the 'sanctuary : yea, I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation. 52 Woe unto you lawyers ! for ye took away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

53 And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the Pharisees began to 'press upon *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of 'many things; 54 laying wait for him, to catch something out of his mouth.

1 In the mean time, when 'the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, inasmuch that they trod one upon another, he began to 'say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 But there is nothing covered up, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. 3 Wherefore whatsoever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what ye have spoken in the ear in the inner chambers shall be proclaimed upon the housetops. 4 And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. 5 But I will warn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, who after he hath killed hath 'power to cast into 'hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him. 6 Are not five sparrows sold for two pence? and not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God. 7 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: ye are of more value than many sparrows. 8 And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess 'me before men, 'him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: 9 but he that denieth me in the

Luke 12
presence of men
shall be denied

in the presence of the angels of God. 10 And every one who shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven. 11 And when they bring you before the synagogues, and the rulers, and the authorities, be not anxious how or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: 12 for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that very hour what ye ought to say.

¹Gr. breakfast. ²Or, ye can. ³Gr. house. ⁴Or, set themselves vehemently against him. ⁵Or, more. ⁶Gr. the myriads of. ⁷Or, say unto his disciples, First of all beware ye. ⁸Or, authority. ⁹Gr. Gehenna. ¹⁰Gr. in me. ¹¹Gr. in him.

103. PARABLES ON THE FOLLY OF WORLDLINESS AND THE NEED FOR SPIRITUAL ALERTNESS

Luke 12:13-59
13 And one out
of the multitude
said unto him,

Teacher, bid my brother divide the inheritance with me. 14 But he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? 15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and keep yourselves from all covetousness: 'for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. 16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: 17 and he reasoned within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have not where to bestow my fruits? 18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my grain and my goods. 19 And I will say to my 'soul, 'Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, be merry. 20 But God said unto him, Thou foolish one, this night 'is thy 'soul required of thee; and the things which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be? 21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

Luke 12

22 And he said

unto his disciples,

Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for *your* 'life, what ye shall eat; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. 23 For the 'life is more than the food, and the body than the raiment. 24 Consider the ravens, that they sow not, neither reap; which have no store-chamber nor barn; and God feedeth them: of how much more value are ye than the birds! 25 And which of you by being anxious can add a cubit unto 'the measure of his life? 26 If then ye are not able to do even that which is least, why are ye anxious concerning the rest? 27 Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin; yet I say unto you, Even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 28 But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven; how much more *shall he clothe* you, O ye of little faith? 29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, and what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. 30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: but your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. 31 Yet seek ye 'his kingdom, and these things shall be added unto you. 32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. 33 Sell that which ye have, and give alms; make for yourselves purses which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief draweth near, neither moth destroyeth. 34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning; 36 and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord, when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto him. 37 Blessed are those 'servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and shall come and serve them. 38 And if he shall come in the second watch, and if in the third, and find *them* so, blessed are those servants. 39 'But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what hour the thief was coming, he would have watched, and not have left his house to be 'broken through. 40 Be ye also ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

41 And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even unto all? 42 And the Lord said, Who then is 'the faithful and wise steward,

Luke 12

whom his lord shall set over his

household, to give them their portion of food in due season? 43 Blessed is that "servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. 45 But if that "servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; 46 the lord of that "servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall ¹²cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful. 47 And that "servant, who knew his lord's will, and made not ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes; 48 but he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. And to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

49 I came to cast fire upon the earth; and ¹³what do I desire, if it is already kindled? 50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! 51 Think ye that I am come to give peace in the earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: 52 for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. 53 They shall be divided, father against son, and son against father; mother against daughter, and daughter against her mother; mother in law against her daughter in law, and daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 And he said to the multitudes also, When ye see a cloud rising in the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it cometh to pass. 55 And when ye see a south wind blowing, ye say, There will be a ¹⁴scorching heat; and it cometh to pass. 56 Ye hypocrites, ye know how to ¹⁵interpret the face of the earth and the heaven; but how is it that ye know not how to ¹⁶interpret this time? 57 And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? 58 For as thou art going with thine adversary before the magistrate, on the way give diligence to be quit of him; lest haply he drag thee unto the judge, and the judge shall deliver thee to the ¹⁷officer, and the ¹⁸officer shall cast thee into prison. 59 I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the very last mite.

¹Or, for even in a man's abundance his life is not from the things which he possesseth. ²Or, life.
³Gr. they require thy soul. ⁴Or, soul. ⁵Or, his stature. ⁶Many ancient authorities read the kingdom of God. ⁷Gr. bondservants. ⁸Or, But this ye know. ⁹Gr. digged through. ¹⁰Or, the faithful steward, the wise man whom &c. ¹¹Gr. lends. ¹²Or, severely scourge him. ¹³Or, how would I that it were already kindled? ¹⁴Or, hot wind. ¹⁵Gr. prove. ¹⁶Gr. exactor.

**104. JESUS USES TWO CURRENT CALAMITIES TO ILLUSTRATE
THE IMPERATIVENESS OF REPENTANCE — THE
PARABLE OF THE BARREN FIG TREE**

Luke 13:1-9

1 Now there were
some present at
that very season

who told him of the Galilæans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 2 And he answered and said unto them, Think ye that these Galilæans were sinners above all the Galilæans, because they have suffered these things? 3 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like manner perish. 4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think ye that they were 'offenders above all the men that dwell in Jerusalem? 5 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none. 7 And he said unto the vinedresser, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why doth it also cumber the ground? 8 And he answering saith unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: 9 and if it bear fruit thenceforth, *well*; but if not, thou shalt cut it down.

¹Gr. *debtors*.

**105. JESUS HEALS A CRIPPLED WOMAN ON THE SABBATH AND
DEFENDS HIMSELF AGAINST THE RULER OF THE SYNAGOGUE**

Luke 13:10-21

10 And he was
teaching in one
of the synagogues

Luke 13
on the sabbath
day. 11 And be-

hold, a woman that had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years; and she was bowed together, and could in no wise lift herself up. 12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her, and said to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. 13 And he laid his hands upon her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. 14 And the ruler of the synagogue, being moved with indignation because Jesus had healed on the sabbath, answered and said to the multitude, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the day of the sabbath. 15 But the Lord answered him, and said, Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the 'stall, and lead him away to watering? 16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, lo, *these* eighteen years, to have been loosed from this bond on the day of the sabbath? 17 And as he said these things, all his adversaries were put to shame: and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 He said therefore, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I liken it? 19 It is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his own garden; and it grew, and became a tree; and the birds of the heaven lodged in the branches thereof.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God? 21 It is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three 'measures of meal, till it was all leavened.

¹Gr. *manger*.
peck and a half.

²The word in the Gr. denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a

106. AT THE FEAST OF DEDICATION JESUS AGAIN CONFRONTS THE HOSTILE JEWS ON THE QUESTION OF HIS MESSIAHSHIP

The Temple, Jerusalem

John 10:22-39
22 'And it was
the feast of the

John 10
dedication at
Jerusalem: 23 it

was winter ; and Jesus was walking in the temple in Solomon's 'porch. 24 The Jews therefore came round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou hold us in suspense ? If thou art the Christ, tell us plainly. 25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believe not : the works that I do in my Father's name, these bear witness of me. 26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep. 27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me : 28 and I give unto them eternal life ; and they shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them out of my hand. 29 'My Father, who hath given *them* unto me, is greater than all ; and no one is able to snatch *them* out of the Father's hand. 30 I and the Father are one. 31 The Jews took up stones again to stone him. 32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed you from the Father ; for which of those works do ye stone me ? 33 The Jews answered him, For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy ; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God. 34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods [Ps. 82:6] ? 35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came (and the scripture cannot be broken), 36 say ye of him, whom the Father 'sanctified and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest ; because I said, I am *the* Son of God ? 37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. 38 But if I do them, though ye believe not me, believe the works : that ye may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I in the Father. 39 They sought again to take him : and he went forth out of their hand.

¹Some ancient authorities read *At that time was the feast.*
authorities read *That which my Father hath given unto me.*

²Or, *portico.*
⁴Or, *aught.*

³Some ancient
⁵Or, *consecrated.*

PART IX

THE PEREAN MINISTRY

JANUARY TO MARCH, PROBABLY A. D. 30

A. THE FIRST WITHDRAWAL* FROM JUDEA TO PEREA

107. JESUS SOJOURNS BEYOND THE JORDAN

John 10:40-42

40 And he went
away again be-
yond the Jordan

into the place where John was at the first baptizing; and there he abode.
41 And many came unto him; and they said, John indeed did no sign: but
all things whatsoever John spake of this man were true. 42 And many
believed on him there.

* The open hostility of the Jerusalem Jews was such as to oblige Jesus to withdraw from Judæa to Peræa, across the Jordan (just as He had previously withdrawn from Galilee to the districts beyond - see Part VII). Returning later to Bethany to raise Lazarus from the dead (sec. 116), He was forced to withdraw again to Peræa until his "hour" came.

**108. A PREACHING TOUR THROUGH PERÆA — JESUS
MOVES AGAIN IN THE DIRECTION OF JERUSALEM**

Luke 13:22

22 And he went
on his way
through cities and
villages, teaching,
and journeying on
unto Jerusalem.

**109. JESUS ANSWERS BY A PARABLE THE QUESTION
WHETHER FEW SHALL BE SAVED**

Probably in Peræa

Luke 13:23-30

23 And one said
unto him, Lord,
are they few that

are saved? And he said unto them, 24 Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall not be 'able. 25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not whence ye are; 26 then shall ye begin to say, We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our streets; 27 and he shall say, I tell you, I know not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. 28 There shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. 29 And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall 'sit down in the

Luke 13
kingdom of God.
30 And behold,

there are last who shall be first, and there are first who shall be last.

¹Or, *able, when once.* ²Gr. *recline.*

110. WARNED BY THE PHARISEES AGAINST HEROD, JESUS EXPRESSES INDIFFERENCE, IRONY AND GRIEF

Luke 13:31-35

31 In that very
hour there came
certain Pharisees,

saying to him, Get thee out, and go hence: for Herod would fain kill thee.
32 And he said unto them, Go and say to that fox, Behold, I cast out
demons and perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third *day* I 'am
perfected. 33 Nevertheless I must go on my way to-day and to-morrow
and the *day* following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of
Jerusalem. 34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killeth the prophets, and
stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy
children together, even as a hen *gathereth* her own brood under her
wings, and ye would not! 35 Behold, your house is left unto you *desolate*:
and I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until ye shall say, Blessed is
he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

¹Or, *end my course.*

111. WHILE DINING WITH A CHIEF PHARISEE ON THE SABBATH,
JESUS HEALS A MAN WITH THE DROPSY AND SILENCES
HIS ADVERSARIES — ADVICE AND WARNING
SUGGESTED BY THE OCCASION

Luke 14:1-24

1 And it came
to pass, when he
went into the

house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a sabbath to eat bread, that they were watching him. 2 And behold, there was before him a certain man that had the dropsy. 3 And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath, or not? 4 But they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go. 5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have 'an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath day? 6 And they could not answer again unto these things.

7 And he spake a parable unto those that were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief seats; saying unto them, 8 When thou art bidden of any man to a marriage feast, 'sit not down in the chief seat; lest haply a more honorable man than thou be bidden of him, 9 and he that bade thee and him shall come and say to thee, Give this man place; and then thou shalt begin with shame to take the lowest place. 10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest place; that when he that hath bidden thee cometh, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have glory in the presence of all that 'sit at meat with thee. 11 For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

12 And he said to him also that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neighbors; lest haply they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee. 13 But when thou makest a feast, bid the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: 14 and thou shalt be blessed; because they have not *wherewith* to recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed

Luke 14
in the resurrec-
tion of the just.

15 And when one of them that 'sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. 16 But he said unto him, A certain man made a great supper; and he bade many: 17 and he sent forth his 'servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for *all* things are now ready. 18 And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out and see it; I pray thee have me excused. 19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them; I pray thee have me excused. 20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. 21 And the 'servant came, and told his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his 'servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. 22 And the 'servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is done, and yet there is room. 23 And the lord said unto the 'servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. 24 For I say unto you, that none of those men that were bidden shall taste of my supper.

¹Many ancient authorities read *a son*. See ch. xiii. 15. ²Gr. *recline*. ³Gr. *reclined*. ⁴Gr. *bondservant*.

112. THREE PARABLES TO THE MULTITUDES ON THE DEMANDS OF TRUE DISCIPLESHIP

Luke 14:25-35
25 Now there
went with him
great multitudes:

and he turned, and said unto them, 26 If any man cometh unto me, and hateth not his own father, and mother, and wife, and children, and

Luke 14
brethren, and
sisters, yea, and

his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. 27 Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. 28 For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit down and count the cost, whether he have *wherewith* to complete it? 29 Lest haply, when he hath laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, all that behold begin to mock him, 30 saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. 31 Or what king, as he goeth to encounter another king in war, will not sit down first and take counsel whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? 32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and asketh conditions of peace. 33 So therefore whosoever he be of you that renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. 34 Salt therefore is good: but if even the salt have lost its savor, wherewith shall it be seasoned? 35 It is fit neither for the land nor for the dunghill: *men* cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

113. CRITICIZED FOR RECEIVING SINNERS, JESUS NARRATES THE PARABLES OF THE LOST SHEEP, THE LOST COIN AND THE LOST SON

Luke 15:1-32

1 Now all the
publicans and
sinner were

drawing near unto him to hear him. 2 And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 And he spake unto them this parable, saying, 4 What man of you, having a hundred sheep, and having lost one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and his

Luke 15
neighbors, say-
ing unto them,

Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 I say unto you, that even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, *more* than over ninety and nine righteous persons, who need no repentance.

8 Or what woman having ten 'pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek diligently until she find it? 9 And when she hath found it, she calleth together her friends and neighbors, saying, Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost. 10 Even so, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

11 And he said, A certain man had two sons: 12 and the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of *'thy* substance that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. 13 And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together and took his journey into a far country; and there he wasted his substance with riotous living. 14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that country; and he began to be in want. 15 And he went and joined himself to one of the citizens of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. 16 And he would fain 'have filled his belly with 'the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. 17 But when he came to himself he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish here with hunger! 18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: 19 I am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But while he was yet afar off, his father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and 'kissed him. 21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: I am no more worthy to be called thy son'. 22 But the father said to his 'servants, Bring forth quickly the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: 23 and bring the fatted calf, *and* kill it, and let us eat, and make merry: 24 for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. 25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. 26 And he called to him one of the servants,

Luke 15

and inquired what these things

might be. 27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. 28 But he was angry, and would not go in: and his father came out, and entreated him. 29 But he answered and said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, and I never transgressed a commandment of thine; and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: 30 but when this thy son came, who hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou killedst for him the fatted calf. 31 And he said unto him, 'Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine is thine. 32 But it was meet to make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive *again*; and *was* lost, and is found.

¹Gr. *drachma*, a coin worth about eight pence, or sixteen cents. ²Gr. *the*. ³Many ancient authorities read *have been filled*. ⁴Gr. *the pods of the carob tree*. ⁵Gr. *kissed him much*. See ch. vii. 38, 45. ⁶Some ancient authorities add *make me as one of thy hired servants*. See ver. 19. ⁷Gr. *bond-servants*. ⁸Gr. *Child*.

114. TWO PARABLES ON THE USE OF MONEY—THE WILY STEWARD, AND THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS

Luke 16:1-31

1 And he said also unto the disciples, There
--

was a certain rich man, who had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he was wasting his goods. 2 And he called him, and said unto him, What is this that I hear of thee? render the account of thy stewardship; for thou canst be no longer steward. 3 And the steward said within himself, What shall I do, seeing that my lord taketh away the stewardship from me? I have not strength to dig; to beg I am ashamed. 4 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. 5 And calling to him each one of his

Luke 16

lord's debtors,

he said to the

first, How much owest thou unto my lord? 6 And he said, A hundred 'measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy 'bond, and sit down quickly and write fifty. 7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, A hundred 'measures of wheat. He saith unto him, Take thy 'bond, and write fourscore. 8 And his lord commended 'the unrighteous steward because he had done wisely: for the sons of this 'world are for their own generation wiser than the sons of the light. 9 And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends 'by means of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when it shall fail, they may receive you into the eternal tabernacles. 10 He that is faithful in a very little is faithful also in much: and he that is unrighteous in a very little is unrighteous also in much. 11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*? 12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another's, who will give you that which is 'your own? 13 No 'servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all these things; and they scoffed at him. 15 And he said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves in the sight of men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God. 16 The law and the prophets *were* until John: from that time the 'gospel of the kingdom of God is preached, and every man entereth violently into it. 17 But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall.

18 Every one that putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth one that is put away from a husband committeth adultery.

19 Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, 'faring sumptuously every day: 20 and a certain beggar named Lazarus was laid at his gate, full of sores, 21 and desiring to be fed with the *crumbs* that fell from the rich man's table; yea, even the dogs came and licked his sores. 22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and that he was carried away by the angels into Abraham's bosom: and the rich

Luke 16

man also died,
and was buried.

23 And in Hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. 24 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am in anguish in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, "Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now here he is comforted, and thou art in anguish. 26 And ¹²besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that they that would pass from hence to you may not be able, and that none may cross over from thence to us. 27 And he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house; 28 for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. 29 But Abraham saith, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. 30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one go to them from the dead, they will repent. 31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, if one rise from the dead.

¹Gr. *baths*, the bath being a Hebrew measure. See Ezek. xlv. 10, 11, 14. ²Gr. *writings*. ³Gr. *cors*, the *cor* being a Hebrew measure. See Ezek. xlv. 14. ⁴Gr. *the steward of unrighteousness*. ⁵Or, *age*. ⁶Gr. *out of*. ⁷Some ancient authorities read *our own*. ⁸Gr. *household-servant*. ⁹Or, *good tidings*: comp. ch. iii. 18. ¹⁰Or, *living in mirth and splendor every day*. ¹¹Gr. *Child*. ¹²Or, *in all these things*.

115. JESUS SPEAKS TO THE DISCIPLES CONCERNING FORGIVENESS, FAITH AND SERVICE

Luke 17:1-10

1 And he said
unto his disciples,
It is impossible

but that occasions of stumbling should come; but woe unto him, through whom they come! 2 It were well for him if a millstone were hanged

Luke 17
about his neck,
and he were

thrown into the sea, rather than that he should cause one of these little ones to stumble. 3 Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. 4 And if he sin against thee seven times in the day, and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. 6 And the Lord said, if ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye would say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in the sea; and it would obey you. 7 But who is there of you, having a 'servant plowing or keeping sheep, that will say unto him, when he is come in from the field, Come straightway and sit down to meat; 8 and will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? 9 Doth he thank the 'servant because he did the things that were commanded? 10 Even so ye also, when ye shall have done all the things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable 'servants; we have done that which it was our duty to do.

¹Gr. *bondservant*. ²Gr. *bondservants*.

116. RETURNING INTO JUDÆA TO BETHANY, JESUS RAISES LAZARUS FROM THE DEAD

John 11:1-44

1 Now a certain
man was sick,
Lazarus of Be-

thany, of the village of Mary and her sister Martha. 2 And it was that Mary who anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. 3 The sisters therefore sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. 4 But when Jesus

John 11

heard it, he said,
This sickness is

not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby. 5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 When therefore he heard that he was sick, he abode at that time two days in the place where he was. 7 Then after this he saith to the disciples, Let us go into Judæa again. 8 The disciples say unto him, Rabbi, the Jews were but now seeking to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? 9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If a man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because the light is not in him. 11 These things spake he: and after this he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus is fallen asleep; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. 12 The disciples therefore said unto him, Lord, if he is fallen asleep, he will recover. 13 Now Jesus had spoken of his death: but they thought that he spake of taking rest in sleep. 14 Then Jesus therefore said unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. 15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him. 16 Thomas therefore, who is called 'Didymus, said unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 So when Jesus came, he found that he had been in the tomb four days already. 18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; 19 and many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary, to console them concerning their brother. 20 Martha therefore, when she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary still sat in the house. 21 Martha therefore said unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 22 And even now I know that, whatsoever thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee. 23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. 24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, though he die, yet shall he live; 26 and whosoever liveth and believeth on me shall never die. Believest thou this? 27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I have believed that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, *even* he that cometh into the world. 28 And when she had said this, she went away, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Teacher is here, and calleth thee. 29 And

John II

she, when she
heard it, arose

quickly, and went unto him. 30 (Now Jesus was not yet come into the village, but was still in the place where Martha met him.) 31 The Jews then who were with her in the house, and were consoling her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up quickly and went out, followed her, supposing that she was going unto the tomb to 'weep there. 32 Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was, and saw him, fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 33 When Jesus therefore saw her 'weeping, and the Jews *also* 'weeping who came with her, he 'groaned in the spirit, and 'was troubled, 34 and said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see. 35 Jesus wept. 36 The Jews therefore said, Behold how he loved him! 37 But some of them said, Could not this man, who opened the eyes of him that was blind, have caused that this man also should not die? 38 Jesus therefore again 'groaning in himself cometh to the tomb. Now it was a cave, and a stone lay 'against it. 39 Jesus saith, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time ¹⁰the body decayeth; for he hath been *dead* four days. 40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou believedst, thou shouldest see the glory of God? 41 So they took away the stone. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou heardest me. 42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the multitude that standeth around I said it, that they may believe that thou didst send me. 43 And when he had thus spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 44 He that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with "grave-clothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

¹Gr. *be saved*.²That is, *Twin*.³Or, *her sister, saying secretly*.⁴Gr. *wail*.⁵Gr. *wailing*.⁶Or, *was moved with indignation in the spirit*.⁷Gr. *troubled himself*.⁸Or, *being moved with indignation**in himself*.⁹Or, *upon*.¹⁰Gr. *he stinketh*.¹¹Or, *grave-bands*.

117. THE RAISING OF LAZARUS CAUSES POPULAR BELIEF,
PHARISAIC PLOTS AND THE CONSEQUENT DEPARTURE
OF JESUS TO EPHRAIM IN NORTHERN JUDÆA

John 11:45-54

45 Many there-
fore of the Jews,
who came to

Mary and beheld 'that which he did, believed on him. 46 But some of them went away to the Pharisees, and told them the things which Jesus had done.

47 The chief priests therefore and the Pharisees gathered a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many signs. 48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation. 49 But a certain one of them, Caiaphas, being high priest that year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, 50 nor do ye take account that it is expedient for you that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. 51 Now this he said not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation; 52 and not for the nation only, but that he might also gather together into one the children of God that are scattered abroad. 53 So from that day forth they took counsel that they might put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews, but departed thence into the country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim; and there he tarried with the disciples.

*Many ancient authorities read *the things which he did*.

B. THE SECOND WITHDRAWAL FROM JUDEA TO PEREA BY WAY OF SAMARIA AND GALILEE*

118. HEALING THE TEN LEPERS

Probably in Samaria

Luke 17:11-19

11 And it came
to pass, 'as they
were on the way

to Jerusalem, that he was passing 'along the borders of Samaria and Galilee. 12 And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, who stood afar off: 13 and they lifted up their voices, saying, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. 14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and show yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, as they went, they were cleansed. 15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, with a loud voice glorifying God; 16 and he fell upon his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. 17 And Jesus answering said, Were not the ten cleansed? but where are the nine? 18 'Were there none found that returned to give glory to God, save this 'stranger? 19 And he said unto him, Arise, and go thy way: thy faith hath 'made thee whole.

¹Or, as he was. ²Or, through the midst of &c. ³Or, There were none found... save this stranger.
⁴Or, alien. ⁵Or, saved thee.

* On His departure from Ephraim (sec. 117), Jesus apparently continued northward through Samaria and Galilee, probably to meet the Passover crowds and accompany them southward again through Peræa on His final journey to Jerusalem.

119. CHRIST'S REPLY TO A QUESTION ABOUT THE COMING OF THE KINGDOM

Probably in Galilee

Luke 17:20-37

20 And being
asked by the
Pharisees, when

the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: 21 neither shall they say, Lo, here! or, There! for lo, the kingdom of God is 'within you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. 23 And they shall say to you, Lo, there! Lo, here! go not away, nor follow after *them*: 24 for as the lightning, when it lighteneth out of the one part under the heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall the Son of man be 'in his day. 25 But first must he suffer many things and be rejected of this generation. 26 And as it came to pass in the days of Noah, even so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. 27 They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. 28 Likewise even as it came to pass in the days of Lot; they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; 29 but in the day that Lot went out from Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all: 30 after the same manner shall it be in the day that the Son of man is revealed. 31 In that day, he that shall be on the house-top, and his goods in the house, let him not go down to take them away: and let him that is in the field likewise not return back. 32 Remember Lot's wife. 33 Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose *his life* shall 'preserve it. 34 I say unto you, In that night there shall be two men on one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. 35 There shall be two women grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.' 37 And they answering say unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Where the body is, thither will the ⁵eagles also be gathered together.

¹Or, in the midst of you.

²Some ancient authorities omit in his day.

³Gr. save it alive.

⁴Some ancient authorities add ver. 36 There shall be two men in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. Mt. xxiv. 40.

⁵Or, vultures.

120. TWO PARABLES ON PRAYER—THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW, AND THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN

Probably in Galilee

Luke 18:1-14

1 And he spake
a parable unto
them to the end

that they ought always to pray, and not to faint; 2 saying, There was in a city a judge, who feared not God, and regarded not man: 3 and there was a widow in that city; and she came oft unto him, saying, 'Avenge me of mine adversary. 4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; 5 yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, 'lest she 'wear me out by her continual coming. 6 And the Lord said, Hear what 'the unrighteous judge saith. 7 And shall not God avenge his elect, that cry to him day and night, 'and yet he is longsuffering over them? 8 I say unto you, that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find 'faith on the earth?

9 And he spake also this parable unto certain who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and set 'all others at nought: 10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. 11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. 12 I fast twice in the week; I give tithes of all that I get. 13 But the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote his breast, saying, God, 'be thou merciful to me a 'sinner. 14 I say unto you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

¹Or, Do me justice of: and so in ver. 5, 7, 8.

²Or, lest at last by her coming she wear me out.

³Gr. bruise. ⁴Gr. the judge of unrighteousness.

⁵Or, and is he slow to punish on their behalf?

⁶Or, the

faith. ⁷Gr. the rest.

⁸Or, be thou propitiated.

⁹Or, the sinner.

121. GOING FROM GALILEE INTO PERÆA, JESUS TEACHES AND HEALS GREAT MULTITUDES

Matt. 19:1-2
1 And it came to
pass when Jesus
had finished these
words, he

de-
parted from Gali-
lee, and came into
the borders of
Judæa beyond the
Jordan; 2 and
great multitudes

followed him;

and
he healed them
there.

Mark 10:1
1 And he

arose
from thence,
and

cometh into the
borders of Judæa and
beyond the Jordan:
and multitudes

come together
unto him again;
and, as he was
wont, he taught
them again.

122. IN REPLY TO A QUESTION OF THE PHARISEES, JESUS TEACHES CONCERNING DIVORCE

Peræa

Matt. 19:3-12
3 And there came
unto him 'Phari-

Mark 10:2-12
2 And there came
unto him Pharisees,

Matt. 19

sees, trying him, and saying, Is it lawful *for a man* to put away his wife for every cause? 4 And he answered and said, Have ye not read, ²that he who ³made *them* from the beginning

made *them* male and female, 5 and said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and the two shall become one flesh [Gen. 2:24]? 6 So that they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. 7 They say unto him, ¹Why then did Moses command to give a bill of divorce-ment, and to put her away? 8 He

Mark 10

and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* wife? trying him. 3 And he answered and said unto them, 6 But from the beginning

of the creation,

Male and female made he them. 7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, ⁴and shall cleave to his wife; 8 and the two shall become one flesh: so that they are no more two, but one flesh. 9 What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. 3^b ⁵What did Moses command you? 4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 But Jesus

Matt. 19
saith unto them,
Moses for your
hardness of heart
suffered you to put
away your wives:
but from the be-
ginning it hath
not been so. 9 And

I say unto you,
Whosoever shall
put away his wife,
'except for for-
nication, and
shall marry
another,

commit-
teth adultery:

'and
he that marrieth
her when she is
put away com-
mitteth adultery.

10 The disciples
say unto him, If
the case of the

Mark 10
said
unto them, For your
hardness of heart he
wrote you this com-
mandment. 10 And
in the house the
disciples asked
him again of this
matter. 11 And he
saith unto them,

Whosoever shall

put away his wife,

and marry another,

committeth adul-
tery against her:

12 and if she her-
self shall put away
her husband, and
marry another,
she committeth
adultery.

Matt. 19
man is so with
his wife, it is not

expedient to marry. 11 But he said unto them, Not all men can receive this saying, but they to whom it is given. 12 For there are eunuchs, that were so born from their mother's womb: and there are eunuchs, that were made eunuchs by men: and there are eunuchs that made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

¹Many authorities, some ancient, insert *the*. ²Gen. i. 27; v. 2. ³Some ancient authorities read *created*. ⁴Some ancient authorities omit *and shall cleave to his wife*. ⁵Dt. xxiv. 1-4. ⁶Some ancient authorities read *saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress*: as in ch. v. 32. ⁷The following words, to the end of the verse, are omitted by some ancient authorities.

123. JESUS BLESSES THE LITTLE CHILDREN

Matt. 19:13-15
13 Then were
there brought
unto him little
children, that he
should lay his
hands on them,
and pray: and

the disciples rebuked

them. 14 But Jesus

Mark 10:13-16
13 And they were
bringing unto him
little children,

that
he should touch
them: and the dis-
ciples rebuked them.
14 But when Jesus
saw it, he was
moved with in-
dignation, and

Luke 18:15-17
15 And they were
bringing unto him

also their babes,
that he should
touch them: but
when the dis-
ciples saw it,
they rebuked
them.
16 But Jesus

Matt. 19	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>said, Suffer the little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for 'to such belongeth the kingdom of heaven.</p>	<p>said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me; forbid them not: for 'to such belongeth the kingdom of God. 15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.</p>	<p>called them unto him, saying, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for 'to such belongeth the kingdom of God. 17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.</p>
<p>15 And he laid his hands on</p>	<p>16 And he took them in his arms, and blessed them, laying his hands upon</p>	
<p>them, and departed thence.</p>	<p>them.</p>	

'Or, of such is.

124. THE RICH YOUNG RULER— A DISCOURSE TO THE DISCIPLES ON THE PERILS OF RICHES AND THE REWARDS OF SERVICE

Matt. 19:16-20:16	Mark 10:17-31	Luke 18:18-30
<p>16 And behold,</p>	<p>17 And as he was going forth 'into</p>	<p>18 And</p>

THE PEREAN MINISTRY

Matt. 19	Mark 10	Luke 18
	the way, there ran	a certain ruler
one	one	
came to him and	to him, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Teacher,	asked him,
said, ² Teacher,		saying, Good Teacher, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? 18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? ³ none is good save one, <i>even</i> God.
what good thing shall I do, that I may		to inherit eternal life? 19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, <i>even</i> God. 20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery,
have eternal life? 17 And he said unto him, ³ Why askest thou me concerning that which is good? One there is who is good:		Do not kill,
but if thou wouldst enter into life, keep the commandments. 18 He saith unto him, Which? And Jesus said,	19 Thou knowest the commandments,	
Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adul-	Do not kill, Do not commit adultery,	

* Note the different reading in Matt. 19:17.

Matt. 19	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>tery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness,</p>	<p>Do not steal, Do not bear false witness,</p>	<p>Do not steal, Do not bear</p>
<p>19 Honor thy father and thy mother [Ex. 20:12-16; Dt. 5:16-20]; and, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself [Lev. 19:18]. 20 The young man saith unto him,</p>	<p>Do not defraud, Honor thy father and mother.</p>	<p>false witness, Honor thy father and</p>
<p>All these things have I observed:</p>	<p>20 And he said unto him,</p>	<p>mother. 21 And he said, All these things</p>
<p>what lack I yet?</p>	<p>Teacher, all these things have I observed from my youth.</p>	<p>have I observed from my youth up. 22 And when Jesus heard it,</p>
<p>21 Je- sus said unto him,</p>	<p>21 And Jesus looking upon him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest:</p>	<p>he said unto him, One thing thou lackest yet: sell all that</p>
<p>If thou wouldest be perfect,</p>	<p>go, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. 22 But</p>	<p>thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. 23 But</p>

<p>Matt. 19</p> <p>when</p> <p>the young man heard</p> <p>the saying, he went</p> <p>a way sorrowful;</p> <p>for he was one</p> <p>that had great</p> <p>possessions. 23 And</p> <p>Jesus said unto his</p> <p>disciples,</p> <p>Verily</p> <p>I say unto you,</p> <p>It is hard for a</p> <p>rich man to enter</p> <p>into the kingdom</p> <p>of heaven.</p> <p>24 And</p> <p>again I say unto</p>	<p>Mark 10</p> <p>his countenance</p> <p>fell at the say-</p> <p>ing, and he</p> <p>went away</p> <p>sor-</p> <p>rowful: for he</p> <p>was</p> <p>one that had</p> <p>great possessions.</p> <p>23 And Jesus</p> <p>look-</p> <p>ed round about,</p> <p>and saith unto</p> <p>his disciples,</p> <p>How hardly shall</p> <p>they that have</p> <p>riches enter into</p> <p>the kingdom of</p> <p>God! 24 And the</p> <p>disciples were</p> <p>amazed at his</p> <p>words. But Jesus</p> <p>answereth again,</p> <p>and saith unto</p> <p>them, Children,</p> <p>how hard is it</p> <p>'for them that</p> <p>trust in riches</p> <p>to enter into</p> <p>the kingdom of</p> <p>God!</p>	<p>Luke 18</p> <p>when he</p> <p>heard these things,</p> <p>he became</p> <p>exceed-</p> <p>ing sorrowful;</p> <p>for he</p> <p>was very rich.</p> <p>24 And Jesus see-</p> <p>ing him</p> <p>said, How</p> <p>hardly shall they</p> <p>that have riches enter</p> <p>into the kingdom of</p> <p>God!</p>
---	--	---

Matt. 19	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>you, It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 25 And when the disciples heard it, they were astonished exceedingly,</p> <p>saying, Who then can be saved? 26 And Jesus looking upon them said to them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.</p>	<p>25 It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 26 And they were astonished exceedingly,</p> <p>saying ⁵unto him, Then who can be saved? 27 Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for all things are possible with God.</p>	<p>25 For it is easier for a camel to enter in through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 26 And they that heard it said, Then who can be saved? 27 But he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with</p>
<p>27 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee; what then shall we have? 28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye who have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of</p>	<p>28 Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee. 29 Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,</p>	<p>God. 28 And Peter said, Lo, we have left ¹⁰our own, and followed thee. 29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you,</p>

THE PEREAN MINISTRY

Matt. 19-20	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.</p>		
<p>29 And every one that hath left houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, ⁷or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive ^aa hundred-fold, and shall inherit eternal life.</p>	<p>There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my sake, and for the gospel's sake, 30 but he shall receive a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the ⁹world to come eternal life.</p>	<p>There is no man that hath left house, or wife, or brethren, or parents, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, 30 who shall not receive manifold more in this time, and in the ⁹world to come eternal life.</p>
<p>30 But many shall be last that are first; and first that are last.</p>	<p>31 But many that are first shall be last; and the last first.</p>	

1 For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that was a householder, who went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard.
 2 And when he had agreed with the laborers for a shilling a day, he sent

Matt. 20
them into his
vineyard. 3 And

he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the market-
place idle; 4 and to them he said, Go ye also into the vineyard, and
whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. 5 Again he
went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise. 6 And about
the eleventh *hour* he went out, and found others standing; and he saith
unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? 7 They say unto him,
Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the
vineyard. 8 And when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto
his steward, Call the laborers, and pay them their hire, beginning from the
last unto the first. 9 And when they came that *were hired* about the
eleventh hour, they received every man a shilling. 10 And when the first
came, they supposed that they would receive more; and they likewise
received every man a shilling. 11 And when they received it, they murmured
against the householder, 12 saying, These last have spent *but* one hour,
and thou hast made them equal unto us, who have borne the burden of the
day and the ¹scorching heat. 13 But he answered and said to one of them,
Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a shilling?
14 Take up that which is thine, and go thy way; it is my will to give unto
this last, even as unto thee. 15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with
mine own? or is thine eye evil, because I am good? 16 So the last shall
be first, and the first last.

¹Or, *on his way*.

²Some ancient authorities read *Good Teacher*. See Mk. 10. 17: Lk. 18; 18.

³Some ancient authorities read *Why callest thou me good? None is good save one, even God*. See Mk. 10. 18;
Lk. 18. 19.

⁴Some ancient authorities omit *for them that trust in riches*.

⁵Many ancient authorities

read *among themselves*.

⁶Or, *our own homes*. See Jn. 19. 27.

⁷Many ancient authorities add *or wife*:

as in Lk. 18. 29.

⁸Some ancient authorities read *manifold*.

⁹Or, *age*.

¹⁰Or, *hot wind*.

125. JESUS AGAIN FORETELLS HIS APPROACHING DEATH AND RESURRECTION PRIVATELY TO THE DISCIPLES

Matt. 20:17-19

Mark 10:32-34

Luke 18:31-34

32 And they were
on the way, going

Matt. 20	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>17 And as Jesus was going up to Jerusalem,</p>	<p>up to Jerusalem; and Jesus was going before them: and they were amazed; and they that followed were afraid. And he took again</p>	<p>31 And he took unto</p>
<p>he took the twelve disciples apart, and on the way he</p>	<p>the twelve, and</p>	<p>him the twelve,</p>
<p>said unto them, 18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and</p>	<p>began to tell them the things that were to happen unto him,</p>	<p>and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all the things that are written through the prophets shall be accomplished unto the Son of man. 32 For</p>
<p>the Son of man shall be 'delivered unto the chief priests and scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, 19 and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles</p>	<p>the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles: 34</p>	<p>he shall be 'delivered up unto the Gentiles,</p>

THE PEREAN MINISTRY

Matt. 20	Mark 10	Luke 18
to mock,	and they shall mock him, and shall spit upon him, and shall scourge him, and shall	and shall be mocked, and shamefully treated, and spit upon: 33 and they shall scourge and kill him: and
and to scourge, and to	kill him; and	the third day he shall rise again.*
crucify:	after three days he shall rise again.	34 And they understood none of these things; and this saying was hid from them, and they perceived not the things that were said.
and the third day he shall be raised up.		

¹Or, *betrayed*.

* Although twice previously (sec. 83 and 87) Jesus has clearly foretold His death and resurrection, this is the first time that He has stated the manner of His death (Matt. 20:19). With reference to the resurrection, on all three occasions Mark says "after three days", while Matthew and Luke say "the third day". As Matthew elsewhere (27:63) also uses the expression "after three days", it seems obvious that these words are to be interpreted in accordance with the Jewish way of counting time, and not in a strictly literal sense.

126. JESUS REPROVES THE SELFISH AMBITION OF
JAMES AND JOHN AND THEIR MOTHER

Matt. 20:20-28

20 Then came to him the mother of the sons of Zebedee with her sons,

worship-
ping *him*, and

asking a certain
thing of him.

21 And he said
unto her, What
wouldest thou?

She
saith unto him,
Command that
these my two
sons may sit,
one on thy
right hand, and
one on thy left
hand, in thy king-
dom. 22 But Je-
sus answered and

Mark 10:35-45

35 And there come
near unto him

'James and John,

the sons of Zebedee,

saying unto him,
Teacher, we
would that thou
shouldest do for
us whatsoever we
shall ask of thee.

36 And he said
unto them, What
would ye that I
should do for
you?

37 And they
said unto him, Grant
unto us that we may
sit, one on thy right
hand, and one on thy
left hand, in thy
glory. 38 But Jesus

Matt. 20

said, Ye know not
what ye ask. Are
ye able to

**drink
the cup that I am
about to drink?**

They say unto him,
We are able. 23 He
saith

**unto them,
My cup indeed
ye shall drink:**

but to sit on my
right hand, and on
my left hand,

**is
not mine to give;
but *it is for*
them for whom
it hath been
prepared of my
Father. 24 And
when the ten**

heard it, they were
moved with indigna-

Mark 10

**said unto them,
Ye know not what
ye ask. Are ye
able to**

drink the
cup that I drink?

**or to be baptized
with the baptism
that I am bap-
tized with? 39
And they said
unto him, We are
able. And Jesus
said**

unto them,
The cup that I
drink ye shall drink;

**and with the bap-
tism that I am
baptized withal
shall ye be bap-
tized: 40 but to
sit on my right
hand or on my
left hand**

is not
mine to give; but *it is*
for them for whom it
hath been prepared.

41 And when the ten

**heard it, they be-
gan to be moved
with indignation**

Matt. 20

tion concerning the two brethren. 25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them. 26 Not so shall it be among you: but whosoever would become great among you shall be your ²minister; 27 and whosoever would be first among you shall be your ³servant: 28 even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

Mark 10

concerning¹James and John. 42 And Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they who are accounted to rule over the Gentiles lord it over them; and their great ones exercise authority over them. 43 But it is not so among you: but whosoever would become great among you, shall be your ²minister; 44 and whosoever would be first among you, shall be ³servant of all. 45 For the Son of man also came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

¹Or, Jacob. ²Or, servant. ³Gr, bondservant.

127. THE HEALING OF BLIND BARTIMÆUS *

Probably Old Jericho

Matt. 20:29-34	Mark 10:46-52	Luke 18:35-43
29 And as they went out from Jericho,	46 And they come to Jericho: and as he went out from Jericho, with his disciples	35 And it came to pass, as he drew nigh unto Jericho,
a great multitude followed him.	and a great multitude,	
30 And behold,	the son of Timæus, Bartimæus, a blind beggar, was sitting by	a certain blind man sat by
two blind men sitting	the way side. 47 And	the way side begging: 36 and hearing a multitude going by, he inquired what this meant. 37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. 38 And
by the way side, when		
they heard that Jesus	when he heard that it was Jesus the Nazarene, he began	
was passing by,		

* Matthew mentions two blind men. As Mark and Luke describe only one, it is probable that he was the more prominent one (cf. sec. 63).

Matt. 20	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>cried out, saying,</p>	<p>to cry out, and say,</p>	<p>he cried, saying, Jesus, thou</p>
<p>Lord,</p>	<p>Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me. 48 And many</p>	<p>son of David, have mercy on me. 39 And they</p>
<p>have mercy on us, thou son of David. 31 And the multitude rebuked them, that they should hold their peace : but they cried out the more,</p>	<p>rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but</p>	<p>that went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but</p>
<p>saying, Lord,</p>	<p>he cried out the more a great deal,</p>	<p>he cried out the more a great deal,</p>
<p>have mercy on us, thou son of David.</p>	<p>Thou son of David, have mercy on me. 49 And Jesus stood still,</p>	<p>Thou son of David, have mercy on me.</p>
<p>32 And Jesus stood still, and called them,</p>	<p>and said, call ye</p>	<p>40 And Jesus stood,</p>
	<p>him. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good cheer: rise, he calleth thee. 50 And he, casting away his gar- ment, sprang up, and came to Jesus. 51 And</p>	<p>and commanded him to be brought unto</p>
		<p>him: and</p>

Matt. 20	Mark 10	Luke 18
<p>and said, What will ye that I should do unto you? 33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. 34 And Jesus,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">being</p> <p>moved with compassion,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">touched</p> <p>their eyes;</p> <p style="text-align: right;">and</p> <p>straightway they received their sight, and followed him.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Jesus</p> <p>answered him,</p> <p style="text-align: center;">and</p> <p>said, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? And the blind man said unto him, 'Rabboni, that I may receive my sight. 52 And Jesus</p> <p>said unto him,*</p> <p>Go thy way;</p> <p>thy faith hath ²made thee whole. And straightway he received his sight, and followed him in the way.</p>	<p>when he was come near,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">he</p> <p>asked him,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">41</p> <p>What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. 42 And Jesus said unto him,</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Receive thy sight:</p> <p style="text-align: right;">thy faith</p> <p>hath ²made thee whole. 43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.</p>

See John xx. 16. ²Or, *saved thee*.

* Note the additional information given in Matt. 20:34, which for grammatical reasons could not be included in the composite narrative.

128. JESUS VISITS ZACCHÆUS

Probably New Jericho *

Luke 19:1-10

1 And he entered and was passing through Jericho.

2 And behold, a man called by name Zacchæus ; and he was a chief publican, and he was rich. 3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was ; and could not for the crowd, because he was little of stature. 4 And he ran on before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him : for he was to pass that way. 5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and said unto him, Zacchæus, make haste, and come down ; for to-day I must abide at thy house. 6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. 7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, He is gone in to lodge with a man that is a sinner. 8 And Zacchæus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor ; and if I have wrongfully exacted aught of any man, I restore fourfold. 9 And Jesus said unto him, To-day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. 10 For the Son of man came to seek and to save that which was lost.

129. AS HE APPROACHES JERUSALEM, JESUS ENDEAVORS TO CORRECT POPULAR MISUNDERSTANDING ABOUT THE COMING OF THE KINGDOM — THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS

Luke 19:11-28

11 And as they heard these

* The healing of blind Bartimæus (sec. 127) apparently took place as Jesus was leaving old Jericho (Mark 10:46; Matt. 20:29) and was on his way to the new city (Luke 18:35), built by Herod the Great, where Zacchæus evidently lived (Luke 19:1).

Luke 19
things, he added
and spake a para-

ble, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and *because* they supposed that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear. 12 He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13 And he called ten 'servants of his, and gave them ten ²pounds, and said unto them, Trade ye *herewith* till I come. 14 But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not that this man reign over us. 15 And it came to pass, when he was come back again, having received the kingdom, that he commanded these 'servants, unto whom he had given the money, to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained by trading. 16 And the first came before him, saying, Lord, thy pound hath made ten pounds more. 17 And he said unto him, Well done, thou good 'servant: because thou wast found faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. 18 And the second came, saying, Thy pound, Lord, hath made five pounds. 19 And he said unto him also, Be thou also over five cities. 20 And 'another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I kept laid up in a napkin: 21 for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that which thou layedst not down, and reapest that which thou didst not sow. 22 He saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked 'servant. Thou knewest that I am an austere man, taking up that which I laid not down, and reaping that which I did not sow; 23 then wherefore gavest thou not my money into the bank, and ⁵I at my coming should have required it with interest? 24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take away from him the pound, and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds. 25 And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds. 26 I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him. 27 But these mine enemies, that would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, going up to Jerusalem.

¹Gr. *bondservants*. ²*Mina*, here translated a pound, is equal to one hundred drachmas. See ch. xv. 8. ³Gr. *bondservant*. ⁴Gr. *the other*. ⁵Or, *I should have gone and required*.

130. THE HOSTILE PROCLAMATION OF THE SANHEDRIN CREATES POPULAR SUSPENSE IN JERUSALEM CONCERNING THE COMING OF JESUS TO THE PASSOVER

John 11:55-57

55 Now the pass-
over of the Jews
was at hand: and

many went up to Jerusalem out of the country before the passover, to purify themselves. 56 They sought therefore for Jesus, and spake one with another, as they stood in the temple, What think ye? That he will not come to the feast? 57 Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that, if any man knew where he was, he should show it, that they might take him.

131. THE ARRIVAL OF JESUS AT BETHANY CAUSES POPULAR INTEREST AND PRIESTLY PLOTS

Friday evening

John 12:1,9-11

1 Jesus therefore
six days before
the passover

came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, whom Jesus raised from the dead.

9 The common people therefore of the Jews learned that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 But the chief priests took counsel that they might put Lazarus also to death; 11 because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

PART X

THE PASSION WEEK

PROBABLY APRIL 2ND TO 8TH, A. D. 30

A. CHRIST'S LAST PUBLIC MINISTRY IN JERUSALEM AND THE FINAL CLASH WITH THE JEWISH LEADERS

FROM SUNDAY TO WEDNESDAY MORNING BEFORE THE PASSOVER

132. THE TRIUMPHAL ENTRY OF JESUS INTO JERUSALEM AS THE MESSIAH

Sunday

Matt. 21:1-11	Mark 11:1-11	Luke 19:29-44	John 12:12-19
	1 And	29 And	12 On the mor- row
1 And when they drew nigh unto Je- rusalem, and came unto Bethphage, unto	when they draw nigh unto Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the	it came to pass, when he drew nigh unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 21	Mark 11	Luke 19
the mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, 2 saying unto them, Go into the village that is over against you, and straightway	mount of Olives, he sendeth two of his disciples, 2 and saith unto them, Go your way into the village that is over against you: and straightway as ye enter in- to it,	mount that is called Olivet, he sent two of the disciples, 30 saying, Go your way into the village over against <i>you</i> ; in which
ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her :	ye shall find a colt tied,	as ye enter ye shall find a colt tied,
loose	whereon no man ever yet sat; loose	whereon no man ever yet sat: loose him,
them, and bring them unto me. 3 And if	him, and bring him. 3 And if	and bring him. 31
any one say aught unto you,	any one say un- to you, Why do ye this?	And if any one ask you, Why do ye
ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them. 6 And the disciples went, and did even as Jesus appointed them, 7 and	say ye, The Lord hath need of him; and straightway he 'will send him ² back hither. 4 And they went away, and	loose him? thus shall ye say, The Lord hath need of him. 32 And they that were sent went away, and found
	found a colt tied at the	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 21	Mark 11	Luke 19	John 12
	door without in the open street;		
	and	even as he had said unto them. 33 And	
	they loose him. 5 And	as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof	
	certain of them		
	that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt? 6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had said :	said unto them, Why loose ye the colt? 34 And they said,	
	and	The Lord hath need of him. 35 And	
	they let them go. 7 And they		
brought the ass, and	bring	they brought him to Jesus: and	
the colt, and put on	the colt unto Jesus, and	they threw their garments upon the colt, and set Jesus thereon. 36 And as he went,	
them their garments;	cast on		
and he sat thereon.	him their garments;		
8 And the most part	and he sat upon		
of the multitude	him. 8 And many	they	'a great mul- titude that had

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 21	Mark 11	Luke 19	John 12
<p>spread their garments in the way; and</p> <p>others cut branches from the trees, and spread them in the way. 9 And</p>	<p>spread their garments upon the way; and</p>	<p>spread their garments in the way. 37 And</p>	<p>come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,</p>
<p>the multitudes that went before him, and that followed, cried,</p>	<p>others</p> <p>branches, which they had cut from the fields. 9 And they</p> <p>that went before, and they that followed,</p> <p>cried,</p>	<p>as he was now drawing nigh, even at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples</p> <p>began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the</p>	<p>13 took the branches of the palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and</p> <p>cried out,</p>

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 21	Mark 11	Luke 19	John 12
<p style="text-align: right;">say- ing, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed</p> <p>is he that cometh in the name of the Lord;</p> <p>Hosanna in the highest.</p>	<p>Hosanna; Blessed</p> <p>is he that com- eth in the name of the Lord:</p> <p>10 Bles- sed is the king- dom that cometh, the kingdom of our father David: Hosanna in the highest.</p>	<p>mighty works which they had seen;</p> <p>38 saying, Blessed is the King that cometh in the name of the Lord:</p> <p>peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.</p>	<p>Hosan- na: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, even the King of Israel.</p> <p>17 The multitude there- fore that was</p>
		<p>39 And some of the Pharisees from the multitude said unto him, Teach-</p>	<p>world is gone after him.</p>

with him when he called Lazarus out of the tomb, and raised him from the dead, bare witness. 18 For this cause also the multitude went and met him, for that they heard that he had done this sign. 19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, "Behold how ye prevail nothing; lo, the

Matt. 21

4 Now
this is come to
pass, that it
might be fulfilled
which was spoken
through the pro-
phet, saying,

5 Tell ye the
daughter of
Zion,

Behold, thy
King cometh
unto thee,
Meek, and rid-
ing upon an
ass,

And upon a
colt the foal
of an ass
[Is. 62:11; Zech.
9:9].

Luke 19

er, rebuke thy
disciples. 40 And
he answered and
said, I tell you
that, if these shall
hold their peace,
the stones will
cry out.

John 12

14 And
Jesus, having found a
young ass, sat there-
on; as it is written

15 Fear not,

daugh-
ter of Zion: be-
hold, thy King
cometh, sitting
on an ass's colt.

16 These things
understood not
his disciples at
the first: but
when Jesus was

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 21	Mark 11	Luke 19	John 12
			glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.
		41 And when he drew nigh, he saw the	
		city and wept over it, 42 saying, 'If thou hadst known in 'this day, even thou, the things which belong unto 'peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. 43 For the days shall come upon thee, when thine enemies shall cast up a 'bank about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, 44 and shall dash thee to the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another;	
10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was stirred, saying, Who is this? 11 And the multitudes said, This is the prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth of Galilee.	11 And he entered into Jerusalem, into the temple; and when he had looked round	because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.	

Mark 11

about upon all
things, it being
now eventide, he
went out unto
Bethany with the
twelve.

¹Gr. *sendeth*.

²Or, *again*.

³Some ancient authorities read *the common people*. See ver. 9.

⁴Gr. *layers of leaves*.

⁵Gr. *powers*.

⁶Or, *Ye behold*.

⁷Or, *O that thou hadst known*.

⁸Some ancient

authorities read *this thy day*.

⁹Some ancient authorities read *thy peace*.

¹⁰Gr. *palisade*.

133. JESUS CURSES THE BARREN FIG TREE

Monday

Matt. 21:18-19

18 Now in the
morning as he re-
turned to the city,

he hungered.

19 And

seeing 'a fig tree
by the way side,

he came to it,
and found

nothing
thereon, but
leaves only;

Mark 11:12-14

12 And on the mor-
row, when they
were come out

from Bethany, he
hungered.

13 And

seeing a fig tree

afar off having
leaves, he came,
if haply he might
find anything
thereon: and
when he came
to it, he found

nothing but leaves;

for it was not the
season of figs. 14

Matt. 21	Mark 11	
<p>and he saith unto it, Let there be no fruit from thee henceforward for ever.</p>	<p>And he answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit from thee henceforward for ever. And his disciples heard it.</p>	
<p>And immediately the fig tree withered away.</p>		

¹Or, a single.

134. THE SECOND CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

Monday

Matt. 21:12-16	Mark 11:15-18	Luke 19:45-48
<p>12 And Jesus entered into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and</p>	<p>15 And they come to Jerusalem: and <small>he entered into the temple,</small> and began to cast out <small>them that sold</small> and them that bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and</p>	<p>45 And he entered into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold,</p>

Mark 11
scribes

heard it,
and sought how
they might des-
troy him :

for
they feared him,

for all the multi-
tude was aston-
ished at his teach-
ing.

Luke 19
scribes and the
principal men of
the people

sought
to destroy him :

48 and they could
not find what
they might do ;

for the people all
hung upon him,
listening.

¹Many ancient authorities omit *of God*.

**135. THE DESIRE OF SOME GREEKS TO SEE JESUS
OCCASIONS A GREAT DISCOURSE ON THE SIG-
NIFICANCE OF HIS APPROACHING DEATH**

Monday

Matt. 21:17

Mark 11:19

John 12:20-50

20 Now there
were certain
Greeks among

those that went up to worship at the feast : 21 these therefore came to Philip, who was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. 22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew : Andrew cometh,

John 12
and Philip, and
they tell Jesus.

23 And Jesus answereth them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and die, it abideth by itself alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. 25 He that loveth his 'life loseth it; and he that hateth his 'life in this world shall keep it unto 'life eternal. 26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will the Father honor. 27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this 'hour. But for this cause came I unto this hour. 28 Father, glorify thy name. There came therefore a voice out of heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. 29 The multitude therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it had thundered: others said, An angel hath spoken to him. 30 Jesus answered and said, This voice hath not come for my sake, but for your sakes. 31 Now is 'the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 And I, if I be lifted up 'from the earth, will draw all men unto myself. 33 But this he said, signifying by what manner of death he should die. 34 The multitude therefore answered him, We have heard out of the law that the Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? 35 Jesus therefore said unto them, Yet a little while is the light 'among you. Walk while ye have the light, that darkness overtake you not: and he that walketh in the darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye have the light, believe on the light, that ye may become sons of light.

These things spake Jesus, and he departed and 'hid himself from them. 37 But though he had done so many signs before them, yet they believed not on him: 38 that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake,

Lord, who hath believed our report?

And to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed [Is. 53:1]?

39 For this cause they could not believe, for that Isaiah said again,

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and he hardened their heart;
Lest they should see with their eyes, and perceive with their heart,
And should turn,
And I should heal them [Is. 6:10].

Matt. 21

Mark 11

John 12

41 These things
said Isaiah, be-

cause he saw his glory; and he spake of him. 42 Nevertheless even of the rulers many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *'it*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: 43 for they loved the glory *that is* of men more than the glory *that is* of God.

44 And Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. 45 And he that beholdeth me beholdeth him that sent me. 46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me may not abide in the darkness. 47 And if any man hear my sayings, and keep them not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my sayings, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I spake, the same shall judge him in the last day. 49 For I spake not from myself; but the Father that sent me, he hath given me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is life eternal; the

things therefore
which I speak,
even as the
Father hath said
unto me, so I
speak.

17 And

he left
them, and went
forth out of the
city to Bethany,
and lodged there.

19 And *'every*
evening

¹⁰he went
forth out of the city.

¹ *Life* in these places represents two different Greek words.

²Or, out of.

³Or, in.

⁴Or, was hidden from them.

⁵Or, him.

⁶Or, hour?

⁷Or, a judgment.

⁸Some ancient authorities read *they*.

⁹Gr. whenever evening came.

136. THE BARREN FIG TREE FOUND WITHERED

Tuesday

Matt. 21:20-22

Mark 11:20-25

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How did the fig tree immediately wither away?

21 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily

I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do

20 And as they passed by in the morning, they saw the fig tree withered away from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Rabbi, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. 23 Verily

Matt. 21
what is done to
the fig tree, but

even if ye shall say
unto this mountain,
Be thou taken up and
cast into the sea,

it
shall be done.
22 And all things,
whatsoever ye
shall ask in pray-
er, believing, ye
shall receive.

Mark 11

I say unto
you, Whosoever
shall say unto
this mountain, Be
thou taken up
and cast into the
sea; and shall not
doubt in his heart,
but shall believe
that what he
saith cometh to
pass;

he shall have
it.

24 Therefore I
say unto you, All
things whatso-

ever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye 'receive them, and ye shall have
them. 25 And whensoever ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught
against any one; that your Father also who is in heaven may forgive you
your trespasses.²

¹Gr. *received*.

²Many ancient authorities add ver. 26 *But if ye do not forgive, neither will your
Father who is in heaven forgive your trespasses.* Comp. Mt. vi. 15; xviii. 35.

137. CHALLENGED BY THE SANHEDRIN AS TO HIS AUTHORITY, JESUS REPLIES WITH A SHREWD QUESTION AND PERTINENT PARABLES

Tuesday

Matt. 21:23-22:14	Mark 11:27-12:12	Luke 20:1-19
23 And when he was	27 And they	1 And
come into the tem-	come again to	
ple, the chief priests	Jerusalem : and	it came to
and the elders of the	as he was walking	pass,* as he was
people came unto	in the temple, there	teaching the peo-
him as he was teach-	come to him the	ple in the temple,
ing, and said, By what	chief priests, and the	and preaching the
authority doest thou	scribes, and the	'gospel, there
these things?	elders; 28 and they	came upon him
	said unto him,	the chief priests
	By	and the scribes
and	what authority	with the elders ;
who gave thee	doest thou these	2 and they spake,
this authority?	things ?	saying unto him,
24 And Jesus an-	or who	Tell us :
swered and said	gave thee this au-	By what
unto them, I also	thority to do these	authority doest thou
	things? 29 And Jesus	these things ? or
	said unto them, I	who is he that gave
		thee this authority?
		3 And he answered
		and said unto them,
		I also

* The words "on one of the days," which should appear here, have been omitted for the sake of chronological sequence in the composite narrative.

Matt. 21
will ask you
one ²question,
which if ye tell
me, I likewise
will tell you
by what author-
ity I do these
things. 25 The
baptism of John,
whence was it?

from heaven or from
men? And they
reasoned with them-
selves, saying, If we
shall say, From heav-
en; he will say unto
us, Why then did ye
not believe him? 26
But if we shall say,
From men; we fear
the multitude; for
all hold John as
a prophet. 27 And
they answered Jesus,
and said, We know
not. He also said
unto them,

Mark 11
will ask of you one
²question, and answer
me, and I will tell
you by what au-
thority I do these
things. 30 The bap-
tism of John, was it
from heaven, or
from men? an-
swer me. 31 And
they reasoned
with themselves,
saying, If we shall
say, From heav-
en; he will say,
Why then did ye
not believe him?

32 ²But should we say,
From men—

they
feared the peo-
ple: 'for all ver-
ily held John
to be a pro-
phet. 33 And they
answered Jesus

and say, We know
not. And Jesus saith
unto them,

Luke 20
will ask you
a ²question; and tell
me: 4 The baptism
of John, was it
from heaven, or
from men? 5 And
they reasoned with
themselves, saying,
If we shall say,
From heaven; he
will say, Why did
ye not believe him?
6 But if we shall
say, From men;
all the people
will stone us:
for

they are
persuaded that John
was a prophet. 7
And they answered,
that they knew
not whence it
was. 8 And Jesus
said unto them,

Matt. 21

Neither
tell I you by
what authority I do
these things.

28 But

what think ye?
A man had two

Mark 11-12

Neither
tell I you by what
authority I do these
things.

1 And he be-
gan to speak unto
them in para-
bles.

Luke 20

Neither tell I you
by what author-
ity I do these
things.

9 And he
began to speak un-
to the people this
parable:

sons; and he came to the first, and said, 'Son, go work to-day in the vineyard. 29 And he answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented himself, and went. 30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not. 31 Which of the two did the will of his father? They say, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. 32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye saw it, did not even repent yourselves afterward, that ye might believe him.

33 Hear another parable:
There was a man
that was a house-
holder, who plant-
ed a vineyard,

and set a hedge about
it, and digged a
winepress in it, and
built a tower, and
let it out to husband-
men, and went in-
to another

A man
planted a vineyard,

and set a hedge
about it, and
digged a pit for
the winepress,
and built a tower,

and let it out
to husbandmen,
and went into an-

A man
planted a vineyard,

and let it out to
husbandmen, and
went into another

Matt. 21	Mark 12	Luke 20
country.	other country.	country for a long time.
34 And when the season of the fruits drew near,	2 And at the season	10 And at the season he sent unto the husbandmen a
he sent his ^s servants to the husbandmen, to receive ^s his fruits.	he sent to the husbandmen a ^s servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruits of the vineyard. 3 And they took him, and beat him, and sent him away empty. 4 And again he sent unto them	^s servant, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.
35 And the husbandmen took his ^s servants, and beat one,	another ^s servant; and him they	11 And he sent yet another ^s servant: and him also they beat, and
	wounded in the head, and handled shamefully.	handled him shamefully, and sent him away empty. 12 And he sent yet a third: and him also they wounded and cast him forth.
and killed another, and	5 And he sent another; and him they killed: and	

Matt. 21	Mark 12	Luke 20
<p>stoned another. 36 Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them in like manner.</p>	<p>many others;</p>	
	<p>beating some, and killing some. 6 He</p>	<p>13 And the lord of the vineyard</p>
<p>37 But afterward he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. 38 But the husbandmen, when they saw the son, said among themselves,</p>	<p>had yet one, a beloved son: he sent him last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son. 7 But those husbandmen said among themselves,</p>	<p>said, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son; it may be they will reverence him. 14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned one with another, saying,</p>
<p>This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and take his inheritance. 39 And they took him,</p>	<p>This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. 8 And they took him,</p>	<p>This is the heir; let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. 15 And they cast him forth out</p>
<p>and cast him forth out of the vineyard, and killed him. 40 When therefore the lord</p>	<p>and killed him, and cast him forth out of the vineyard. 9 What therefore will the lord</p>	<p>of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore will the lord</p>

Matt. 21
of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto those husbandmen? 41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other husbandmen, who shall render him the fruits in their seasons. 42 Jesus

saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures,

The stone which the builders rejected,

The same was made the head of the corner;

This was from the Lord,

And it is marvellous in our eyes?

Mark 12
of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 Have ye not read even this scripture:

The stone which the builders rejected,

The same was made the head of the corner;

11 This was from the Lord,

And it is marvellous in our eyes [Ps. 118 : 22-23]?

Luke 20
of the vineyard do unto them? 16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others. And when they heard it, they said, "God forbid. 17 But he looked upon them, and said,

What then is this that is written,

The stone which the builders rejected,

The same was made the head of the corner?

Matt. 21-22	Mark 12	Luke 20
<p>43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. 44 "And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces : but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust. 45 And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. 46 And when</p> <p>they sought to lay hold on him, they feared the multitudes,</p> <p>because they took him for a prophet.</p> <p>1 And Jesus answered and</p>	<p>12 And they sought to lay hold on him ; and</p> <p>they feared the multitude;</p> <p>for they perceived that he spake the parable against them :</p>	<p>18 Every one that falleth on that stone shall be broken to pieces ; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust. 19 And the scribes and</p> <p>the chief priests sought to lay hands on him in that very hour ;</p> <p>and they feared the people : for they perceived that he spake this parable against them.</p>

Matt. 22
spake again in
parables unto

them, saying, 2 The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king, who made a marriage feast for his son, 3 and sent forth his ¹servants to call them that were bidden to the marriage feast: and they would not come. 4 Again he sent forth other ¹servants, saying, Tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage feast. 5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise; 6 and the rest laid hold on his ¹servants, and treated them shamefully, and killed them. 7 But the king was wroth; and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned their city. 8 Then saith he to his ¹servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not worthy. 9 Go ye therefore unto the partings of the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast. 10 And those ¹servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was filled with guests. 11 But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw there a man who had not on a wedding-garment: 12 and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. 13 Then the king said to the ¹servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth. 14 For many are called,

and they left
him, and went
away.

¹Or, good tidings; comp. ch. iii, 18. ²Gr. word. ³Or, But shall we say, From men? ⁴Or, for all held John to be a prophet indeed. ⁵Gr. children. ⁶Gr. Child. ⁷Gr. bondservant. ⁸Gr. bond-servants. ⁹Or, the fruits of it. ¹⁰Gr. Be it not so. ¹¹Some ancient authorities omit ver. 44. ¹²Or, ministers.

**138. THE PHARISEES AND HERODIANS TRY IN VAIN
TO ENSNARE JESUS WITH A QUESTION ABOUT
PAYING TRIBUTE TO CÆSAR**

Tuesday

Matt. 22:15-22	Mark 12:13-17	Luke 20:20-26
<p>15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might ensnare him in his talk.</p>		
<p>16 And</p>	<p>13 And they</p>	<p>20 And they</p>
<p>they send to him</p>	<p>send unto him certain</p>	<p>watched him, and sent forth</p>
<p>their disciples,</p>	<p>of</p>	<p>spies,</p>
<p>with the Herodians,</p>	<p>the Pharisees and of the Herodians,</p>	
		<p>who feigned themselves to be righteous,</p>
	<p>that</p>	<p>that they</p>
	<p>they might catch him in</p>	<p>might take hold of</p>
	<p>talk.</p>	<p>his speech, so</p>
		<p>as to deliver him</p>
		<p>up to the 'rule</p>
		<p>and to the authority of the governor.</p>
	<p>14 And</p>	
	<p>when they were</p>	

Matt. 22	Mark 12	Luke 20
<p>saying, Teacher, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, and carest not for any one: for thou regardest not the person of men.</p>	<p>come, they say unto him, Teacher, we know that thou art true, and carest not for any one; for thou regardest not the person of men, but of a truth teachest the way of God:</p>	<p>21 And they asked him, saying, Teacher, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, and</p>
<p>17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto</p>	<p>Is it lawful to give tribute unto</p>	<p>ac- ceptest not the person</p>
<p>Cæsar, or not? 18 But Jesus</p>	<p>Cæsar, or not? 15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy,</p>	<p><i>of any,</i> but of a truth teachest the way of God: 22 Is it lawful</p>
<p>perceived their wickedness, and said, Why make ye trial of me, ye hypocrites? 19 Show me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a ²denarius.</p>	<p>said unto them, Why make ye trial of me? bring me a ²denarius, that I may see it. 16 And they brought it.</p>	<p>for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not?</p>
<p>20 And he saith unto them,</p>	<p>And he saith unto them,</p>	<p>23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, 24 Show me a ²denarius.</p>

Matt. 22	Mark 12	Luke 20
<p>Whose is this image and superscription? 21 They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he</p> <p>unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's; and unto God the things that are God's. 22 And when they heard it,</p>	<p>Whose is this image and superscription?</p> <p>And they said unto him, Cæsar's. 17 And Jesus said</p> <p>unto them, Render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's.</p>	<p>Whose image and superscription hath it?</p> <p>And they said, Cæsar's. 25 And he said unto them, Then render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's. 26 And</p> <p>they were not able to take hold of the saying before the peo- ple: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.</p>
<p>they marvelled,</p> <p>and left him, and went away.</p>	<p>And they marvelled great- ly at him.</p>	

¹Or, *ruling power*.

²See marginal note on ch. xviii. 28.

139. JESUS REPLIES TO A SUBTLE QUESTION FROM THE SADDUCEES ABOUT THE RESURRECTION

Tuesday

Matt. 22:23-33	Mark 12:18-27	Luke 20:27-39
23 On that day	18 And	27 And there came to him
there came to him	there come unto him	certain of the Sadducees, they that say that there is no resurrection; 28 and they asked
Sadducees, 'they that say that there is no resurrection: and they asked him, 24 saying, Teacher, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother ² shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.	Sadducees, who say that there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, 19 Teacher, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave a wife behind him, and leave no child, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother [Dt. 25:5].	him, saying, Teacher, Moses wrote unto us, that if a man's brother die, having a wife, and he be childless, his brother should take the wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. 29 There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died childless;
25 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first married and deceased, and having no seed left his wife unto	20 There were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed;	

Matt. 22	Mark 12	Luke 19
his brother; 26 in like manner the second	21 and the second	30 and the second: 31
also, and the third,	took her, and died, leaving no seed behind him; and the third likewise:	and the third took her; and likewise the seven also left no
unto the 'seventh. 27 And	22 and	children and died.
after them all, the woman died.	the seven left no seed. Last of all the woman also died.	32 Afterward the woman also died. 33
28 In the resurrection therefore whose wife shall she be of the sev- en? for they all had her.	23 In the resurrection whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.	In the resurrection therefore whose wife of them shall she be? for the seven had her to wife. 34 And
29 But Je- sus answered and said unto them,	24 Jesus said unto them,	Jesus said unto them,
Ye do err, not know- ing the scriptures, nor the power of God.	Is it not for this cause that ye err, that ye know not the scriptures, nor the power of God?	The sons of this 'world marry, and are given in marriage: 35 but they that are accounted worthy
30 For	25 For	

Matt. 22	Mark 12	Luke 20
<p>in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as angels^s in heaven. 31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, 32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?</p>	<p>when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as angels in heaven. 26 But as touching the dead, that they are raised; have ye not read in the book of Mo- ses, in the place concerning the Bush, how God spake unto him, saying, I <i>am</i> the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob [Ex. 3:6]?</p>	<p>to attain to that 'world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage: 36 for neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrec- tion. 37 But that the dead are raised, even Moses showed, in the place concerning the Bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.</p>

Matt. 22	Mark 12	Luke 12
God is not <i>the</i> God of the dead, but of the living.	27 He is not the God of the dead, but of the living: ye do greatly err.	38 Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him. 39 And certain of the scribes answering said, Teacher, thou hast well said,
33 And when the multitudes heard it, they were astonished at his teaching.		

¹Many ancient authorities read *saying*. ²Gr. *shall perform the duty of a husband's brother to his wife*. ³Gr. *seven*. ⁴Or, *age*. ⁵Many ancient authorities add *of God*.

140. JESUS ANSWERS THE QUESTION OF A PHARISAIC LAWYER CONCERNING THE GREATEST COMMANDMENT

Tuesday afternoon

Matt. 22:34-40	Mark 12:28-34a	Luke 21:37
34 But the Pharisees, when they heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, gathered them-		

Matt. 22

selves together.
35 And one of
them, a lawyer,

asked

him a ques-
tion, trying him:
36 Teacher, which
is the great
commandment
in the law?

37 And he said unto
him, Thou shalt love
the Lord thy God
with all thy heart,
and with all thy
soul, and with all
thy mind.

38 This
is the great and
first command-
ment. 39 'And a
second like unto
it is this, Thou

Mark 12

28 And one of the
scribes

came, and
heard them ques-
tioning together,
and knowing
that he had an-
swered them well,
asked

him, What
commandment is
the first of all?

29 Jesus answer-
ed, The first is,
Hear, O Israel;
'The Lord our
God, the Lord is
one: 30 and thou
shalt love the
Lord thy God
²with all thy heart,
and ²with all thy
soul, and ²with
all thy mind,
and ²with all thy
strength [Dt. 6:4-5].

31 The second is this,
Thou

Matt. 22
 shalt love thy
 neighbor as thy-
 self [Lev. 19:18]. 40
 On these two
 commandments
 the whole law
 hangeth, and the
 prophets.

Mark 12
 shalt love thy
 neighbor as thyself.

Luke 21

There is none
 other command-
 ment greater than

these. 32 And the scribe said unto him, Of a truth, Teacher, thou hast well
 said that he is one; and there is none other but he: 33 and to love him with
 all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the strength,
 and to love his neighbor as himself, is much more than all whole burnt-
 offerings and sacrifices. 34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly,

he said unto him,
 Thou art not
 far from the
 kingdom of God.

37 And every day
 he was teaching

in the temple; and every night he went out, and lodged in the mount that
 is called Olivet.*

¹Or, *The Lord is our God; the Lord is one.* ²Gr. *from.* ³Or, *And a second is like unto it, Thou shalt love &c.*

* Some scholars include sec. 141-147 also in the events of Tuesday, thus crowding that day and leaving Wednesday silent. To Moffatt and others, however, the language of Matt. 22:41; Mark 12:34-35; Luke 22:40 suggests an interval, probably indicating that Tuesday's ministry closed with sec. 140.

141. JESUS FINALLY SILENCES THE PHARISEES WITH THE QUESTION OF THE MESSIAH'S RELATIONSHIP TO DAVID

Wednesday

Matt. 22:41-46 Mark 12:34b-37a Luke 21:38; 20:40-44

41 Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question,

42 saying, What think ye of the Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son of David.* 43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in the Spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my

35 And Jesus answered and said,

as he taught

in the temple, How say the scribes that the Christ is the son of David? 36 David himself said in the Holy Spirit,

The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.

20:41 And

he said unto them,

How say they that

the Christ is

David's son? 42 For

David himself saith

in the book of Psalms,

The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on

Matt. 22 right hand,	Mark 12 right hand,	Luke 20 my right hand,
Till I put thine	Till I make thine	43 Till I make
enemies under-	enemies 'the	thine ene-
neath thy feet ?	footstool of thy	mies the
	feet.	footstool of
		thy feet [Ps.
	37 David	110:1].
45 If David then call-		44 David there-
	himself	fore
eth him Lord,	calleth him Lord;	calleth him
	and	
how	whence is he	Lord, and how is he
is he his son?	his son ? 34b And	his son ? 40 For they
46 And no one	no man after that	durst not any more
was able to an-	durst ask him any	ask him any question.
swer him a word,	question.	
neither durst any		
man from that		
day forth ask		
him any more		
questions.		

¹Some ancient authorities read *underneath thy feet*.

142. JESUS PUBLICLY DENOUNCES THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES

Wednesday

Matt. 23:1-39

Mark 12:37b-40

Luke 20:45-47

**37b And 'the com-
mon people heard
him gladly.**

45 And

Matt. 23	Mark 12	Luke 20
1 Then spake Jesus to the multitudes and	38 And in his teaching	 in the hearing of all the people he said unto his disciples,
to his disciples, 2 saying, The	he said,	
 scribes and the Pharisees	Beware of the	46 Be- ware of the scribes,
sit on Moses' seat: 3 all things there- fore whatsoever	who desire	who desire
they bid you, <i>these</i> do and observe: but do not ye after their works; for they say, and do not. 4 Yea, they bind heavy burdens 'and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with their finger. 5 But all their works they do to be seen of men: for they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of <i>their garments</i> ,		
6 and love	to walk in long robes, and <i>to</i> <i>have</i>	to walk in long robes, and love salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts;
the chief place at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, 7 and the salutations in the marketplaces, and to be called of men, Rabbi.	salutations in the market- places, 39 and chief seats in the syna- gogues, and chief places at feasts:	

Matt. 23

Mark 12

Luke 20

40 they that devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers; these shall receive greater condemnation.

47 who devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation.

8 But be not ye called Rabbi: for

one is your teacher, and all ye are brethren. 9 And call no man your father on the earth: for one is your Father, *even* he who is in heaven. 10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, *even* the Christ. 11 But he that is *'greatest* among you shall be your *'servant*. 12 And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted.

13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut the kingdom of heaven *'against* men: for ye enter not in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.^s

15 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of *'hell* than yourselves.

16 Woe unto you, ye blind guides, that say, Whosoever shall swear by the *¹⁰temple*, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the *¹⁰temple*, he is *¹¹a debtor*. 17 Ye fools and blind: for which is greater, the gold, or the *¹⁰temple* that hath sanctified the gold? 18 And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gift that is upon it, he is *¹¹a debtor*. 19 Ye blind: for which is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? 20 He therefore that sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. 21 And he that sweareth by the *¹²temple*, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. 22 And he that sweareth by the heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye tithe mint and *¹²anise* and cummin, and have left undone the weightier matters of the law, justice, and mercy, and faith: but these ye ought to have done, and

Matt. 23

not to have left
the other undone.

24 Ye blind guides, that strain out the gnat, and swallow the camel!

25 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full from extortion and excess. 26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become clean also.

27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. 28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and garnish the tombs of the righteous, 30 and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we should not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. 31 Wherefore ye witness to yourselves, that ye are sons of them that slew the prophets. 32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. 33 Ye serpents, ye offspring of vipers, how shall ye escape the judgment of ⁹hell? 34 Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: some of them shall ye kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city: 35 that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zachariah son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the sanctuary and the altar. 36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killeth the prophets, and stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! 38 Behold, your house is left unto you ¹³desolate. 39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

¹Or, the great multitude.
while for a pretence they make.

²Many ancient authorities omit and grievous to be borne.
⁴Gr. the heavenly.

³Or, even

⁵Gr. greater.

⁶Or, minister.

⁷Gr. before.

⁸Some authorities insert here, or after ver. 12, ver. 14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, even while for a pretence ye make long prayers: therefore ye shall receive greater condemnation. See Mk. xii. 40; Lk. xx. 47. ⁹Gr. Gehenna. ¹⁰Or, sanctuary: as in ver. 35. ¹¹Or, bound by his oath. ¹²Or, fill. ¹³Some ancient authorities omit desolate.

143. A WIDOW'S TWO MITES

Wednesday

Mark 12:41-44

Luke 21:1-4

41 And he sat
down over against
the treasury, and

1 And

he looked
up, 'and

beheld how the
multitude cast
'money into the
treasury: and
many that were
rich cast in much.

saw the

rich men that were
casting their gifts

42 And there
came 'a poor
widow, and she
cast in two mites,
which make a
farthing. 43 And
he called unto
him his disciples,
and said unto
them, Verily I
say unto you,
This poor widow
cast in more
than all they
that are casting
into the treasury:

into the treasury. 2

And he saw a
certain poor widow
casting in thither

two mites. 3 And he

said, Of a truth I

say unto you, This

poor widow cast in

more than they all:

44 for they all did
cast in of their
superfluity;

4 for all these
did of their
superfluity cast

Mark 12	Luke 21
<p>but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.</p>	<p>in unto the gifts ;</p> <p>but she of her want did cast in all the living that she had.</p>

¹Or, and saw them that...treasury, and they were rich. ²Gr. brass. ³Gr. one.

B. JESUS WITH THE TWELVE IN THE SHADOW OF THE CROSS

FROM WEDNESDAY AFTERNOON TO THURSDAY NIGHT BEFORE THE PASSEOVER

144. A GREAT DISCOURSE TO THE DISCIPLES ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM AND THE END OF THE WORLD

Wednesday afternoon, on the Mount of Olives

Matt. 24-25	Mark 13:1-37	Luke 21:5-36
<p>1 And Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way ; and</p> <p>his disciples came to him</p>	<p>1 And as he went forth out of the temple,</p> <p>one of his disciples saith</p>	<p>5 And</p> <p>as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and offerings,</p>

Matt. 24

to show him
the buildings of
the temple.

**2 But
he answered and
said unto them,
See ye**

not all these
things?

**verily I
say unto you,**

There shall not be
left here one stone
upon another, that
shall not be thrown
down. **3** And as he
sat on the mount of
Olives, the disciples
came unto him pri-
vately, saying, Tell
us, when shall these
things be?

Mark 13

**unto him, Teach-
er, behold, what
manner of stones
and what manner
of buildings!**

2
And Jesus said un-
to him, seest thou

**these great build-
ings?**

there shall
not be left here one
stone upon another,
which shall not be
thrown down.

**3 And
as he sat on the
mount of Olives
over against the
temple, Peter and
'James and John
and Andrew asked
him privately, 4
Tell us, when
shall these things
be? and what
shall be the sign
when these things
are all about to be
accomplished?**

Luke 21

he said,

6 As for these things

which ye behold,

**the days will
come, in which
there shall not
be left here one
stone upon an-
other, that shall
not be thrown
down.**

7 And they
asked him, saying,
Teacher, when there-
fore shall these
things be?

Matt. 24
 and
 what *shall be*
 the sign of thy
 'coming, and of
 'the end of the
 world? 4 And
 Jesus answered
 and said unto
 them, Take heed
 that no man lead
 you astray. 5
 For many shall
 come in my
 name, saying, I
 am the Christ;

and shall lead many
 astray. 6 And ye
 shall hear of wars
 and rumors of wars;
 see that ye be not
 troubled: for *these*
things must needs
 come to pass; but
 the end is not yet.
 7 For nation shall
 rise against nation,
 and kingdom

Mark 13
 5
 And Jesus began
 to say unto them,
 Take heed that no
 man lead you astray.
 6 Many shall come
 in my name, saying,
 I am *he*;

and shall
 lead many astray.

7 And when ye
 shall hear of
 wars and rumors
 of wars,

be not
 troubled: *these things*
 must needs come
 to pass;

but the
 end is not yet.

8 For nation shall
 rise against na-
 tion, and kingdom

Luke 21
 and what
shall be the sign when
 these things are
 about to come to
 pass? 8 And he
 said, Take heed that
 ye be not led a-
 stray: for many shall
 come in my name,
 saying, I am *he*;
 and, The time is
 at hand:

go ye
 not after them.

9 And when ye
 shall hear of wars

and tumults, be
 not terrified:
 for these things
 must needs come
 to pass first;

but the end is
 not immediately.

10 Then said he
 unto them, Nation
 shall rise against
 nation, and king-

Matt. 24	Mark 13	Luke 21
<p>against kingdom; and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places. 8 But all these things are the beginning of travail. 9 Then shall they deliver you up unto tribu- lation, and shall kill you:</p>	<p>against kingdom; there shall be earthquakes in divers places; there shall be famines: these things are the beginning of tra- vail. 9 But take ye heed to your- selves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in syna- gogues shall ye be beaten; and before govern- ors and kings shall ye stand for my sake,</p>	<p>dom against kingdom; 11 and there shall be great earth- quakes, and in divers places famines and pes- tilences; and there shall be terrors and great signs from heaven. 12 But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall per- secute you, de- livering you up to the synagogues and prisons, *bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake. 13 It shall</p>

Matt. 24	Mark 13	Luke 21
		turn out unto you
	for a testimony unto them.	for a testimony.
		14 Settle it there- fore in your hearts,
	11 And when they lead you to <i>judg- ment</i> , and de- liver you up, be not anxious beforehand	not to meditate be- forehand
	what ye shall speak: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye;	how to answer:
		15 for I will give you a mouth and wis- dom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or to gainsay.
	for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Spirit. 13 And ye shall be hated	17 And ye shall be hated of all men
and ye shall be hated of all the nations	of all men	

<p>Matt. 24 for my name's sake.</p> <p>10 And then shall many stumble, and</p>	<p>Mark 13 for my name's sake :</p>	<p>Luke 21 for my name's sake. 16 But</p> <p>ye shall be ⁵de- livered up even by parents, and</p>
<p>shall deliver up one another,</p> <p>and [they] shall hate one another. 11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many astray. 12 And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of the many shall wax cold. 13 But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.</p>	<p>12 And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child; and children shall rise up against parents,</p> <p>and cause them to be put to death.</p> <p>13b but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.</p>	<p>brethren, and kinsfolk, and friends; and some of you ⁶shall they cause to be put to death. 18 And not a hair of your head shall perish. 19 In your ⁷patience ye shall win your ⁸souls.</p>

Matt. 24

**your
flight be not in the
winter, neither
on a sabbath:
21 for then shall
be great tribu-
lation, such as
hath not been
from the begin-
ning of the world**

until now, no, nor
ever shall be.

Mark 13

it be not in the
winter. 19 For those
days shall be tribu-
lation, such as there
hath not been the
like from the begin-
ning of the creation

**which God creat-
ed until now, and
never shall be.**

Luke 21

24 And

they shall fall

by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all the nations:
and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times

of the Gentiles be
fulfilled.

22 And

except those days
had been shortened,
no flesh would have
been saved: but for
the elect's sake

**20 And except the
Lord had short-
ened the days; no
flesh would have
been saved; but
for the elect's
sake, whom he
chose,**

those

**days shall be
shortened. 23
Then if any man
shall say unto
you, Lo, here is
the Christ, or,
Here; believe ^{it}
not. 24 For there**

he shortened

the days. 21 And
then if any man shall
say unto you, Lo,
here is the Christ;
or, Lo, there; believe
^{it} not: 22 for there

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 24

shall arise false
Christs, and false
prophets, and
shall show great
signs and won-
ders; so as to
lead astray, if
possible, even
the elect.

25 Be-

hold, I have told you
beforehand.

26 If

therefore they
shall say unto

you, Behold, he is in the wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the
inner chambers; believe ¹⁵it not. 27 For as the lightning cometh forth
from the east, and is seen even unto the west; so shall be the ²coming of
the Son of man. 28 Wheresoever the carcase is, there will the ¹⁶eagles be

gathered togeth-
er. 29 But im-
mediately after
the tribulation
of those days
the sun shall
be darkened,

and
the moon shall not
give her light, and
the stars shall
fall from heaven,

and the moon
shall not give her
light, 25 and the
stars shall be fall-
ing from heaven,
and

Mark 13

shall arise false
Christs and false
prophets, and shall
show signs and
wonders, that they
may lead astray, if
possible, the elect.

23 But take ye
heed: behold, I
have told you
all things before-
hand.

24 But in

those days, after that
tribulation, the sun
shall be darkened,

Luke 21

25 And

there shall be
signs in sun and

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 24	Mark 13	Luke 21
		moon and stars; and upon the
earth distress of nations, in perplexity for the roaring of the sea and the billows; 26 men	fainting for fear, and for expectation of the things	
		which are coming on ¹⁸ the world: for
and the powers of the heavens	the powers that are in the heavens	the powers of
shall		the heavens shall be
be shaken : 30 and then shall appear the sign of the	shall be	shaken. 27 And then
Son of man in heaven : and then shall all the tribes	shaken. 26 And then	shall they see the
of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son	shall they see the	Son of man coming
of man coming on the clouds of heaven with	Son of man coming	in a cloud with power
power and great glory. 31 And he shall send forth	in clouds with great	and great glory.
his angels ¹⁸ with ¹⁹ a great sound of a trumpet,	power and glory. 27	
and they shall gather together his elect from	And then shall he	
the four winds,	send forth the angels,	
from one end of heaven to	and shall gather	
	together his elect	
	from the four winds,	
	from the utter- most part of the earth to	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 24	Mark 13	Luke 21
the other.	the uttermost part of heaven.	28 But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads; because your redemption draweth nigh.
32 Now from the fig tree learn her parable: when her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is nigh;	28 Now from the fig tree learn her parable: when her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth its leaves,	29 And he spake to them a parable: Behold the fig tree,
33 even so ye also, when ye see all these things, know ye that ²⁰ he is nigh, even at the doors.	ye know that the summer is nigh; 29 even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that ²⁰ he	and all the trees: 30 when they now shoot forth, ye see it and know of your own selves that the summer is now nigh. 31 Even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God *
34 Verily	is nigh, even at the doors. 30 Verily	is nigh. 32 Verily

* Note Matt. 24:33; Mark 13:29.

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 24

I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished. 35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

36 But of that day and hour knoweth no one, not even the angels of heaven, ²¹neither the Son, but the Father only. 37 And as *were* the days of Noah, so shall

be the ²coming of the Son of man. 38 For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, 39 and they knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall be the ²coming of the Son of man. 40 Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left: 41 two women *shall be* grinding at the mill; one is taken, and one is left.

Mark 13

I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, until all these things be accomplished. 31 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

32 But of that day or that hour knoweth no one, not even the angels in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 Take ye heed,

Luke 21

I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all things be accomplished. 33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

34 But take heed to yourselves, lest haply your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 24

Mark 13

Luke 21

42 Watch therefore:

pray:

watch ²²and

life, and that day
come on you sud-
denly as a snare :
35 for so shall it
come upon all
them that dwell
on the face of
all the earth. 36
But watch ye at
every season,
making suppli-
cation, that ye
may prevail to
escape all these
things that shall
come to pass,
and to stand be-
fore the Son of
man.

for ye know not

not

for ye know

when the time is.

on
what day your
Lord cometh.

34 *It is as when*
a man, sojourn-
ing in another

country, having left his house, and given authority to his ²³servants, to
each one his work, commanded also the porter to watch. 35 Watch there-
fore: for ye know not when the lord of the house cometh, whether at even,
or at midnight, or at cockcrow, or in the morning; 36 lest coming sud-

denly he find you
sleeping.

43 ²⁴But know this,
that if the master
of the house had

Matt. 24-25
known in what
watch the thief

Mark 13

was coming, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be ²⁷broken through. 44 Therefore be ye also ready; for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

37 And
what I say un-
to you I say
unto all, Watch.

45 Who then
is the faithful
and wise ²⁶ser-

vant, whom his lord hath set over his household, to give them their food in due season? 46 Blessed is that ²⁶servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 47 Verily I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. 48 But if that evil ²⁶servant shall say in his heart, My lord tarrieth; 49 and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; 50 the lord of that ²⁶servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, 51 and shall ²⁷cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.

1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, who took their ²⁶lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. 2 And five of them were foolish, and five were wise. 3 For the foolish, when they took their ²⁶lamps, took no oil with them: 4 but the wise took oil in their vessels with their ²⁶lamps. 5 Now while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. 6 But at midnight there is a cry, Behold, the bridegroom! Come ye forth to meet him. 7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their ²⁶lamps. 8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our ²⁶lamps are going out. 9 But the wise answered, saying, Peradventure there will not be enough for us and you: go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. 10 And while they went away to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast: and the door was shut. 11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord,

Matt. 25

Lord, open to us.

12 But he an-

swered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. 13 Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.

14 For *it is* as *when* a man, going into another country, called his own ²³servants, and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, to another one; to each according to his several ability; and he went on his journey. 16 Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded with them, and made other five talents. 17 In like manner he also that *received* the two gained other two. 18 But he that received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. 19 Now after a long time the lord of those ²³servants cometh, and maketh a reckoning with them. 20 And he that received the five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: lo, I have gained other five talents. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful ²⁶servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 22 And he also that *received* the two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: lo, I have gained other two talents. 23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful ²⁶servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 24 And he also that had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering where thou didst not scatter; 25 and I was afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast thine own. 26 But his lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful ²⁶servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; 27 thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the bankers, and at my coming I should have received back mine own with interest. 28 Take ye away therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him that hath the ten talents. 29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away. 30 And cast ye out the unprofitable ²⁶servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.

31 But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the angels with him, then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: 32 and before

Matt. 25

him shall be			
gathered all the			

nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separateth the sheep from the goats; 33 and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. 34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: 35 for I was hungry, and ye gave me to eat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me in; 36 naked, and ye clothed me; I was sick, and ye visited me; I was in prison, and ye came unto me. 37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and fed thee? or athirst, and gave thee drink? 38 And when saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? 39 And when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? 40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of these my brethren, *even* these least, ye did it unto me. 41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, ²⁹Depart from me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels: 42 for I was hungry, and ye did not give me to eat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink; 43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; naked, and ye clothed me not; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. 44 Then shall they also answer, saying, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? 45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not unto one of these least, ye did it not unto me. 46 And these shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous into eternal life.

¹Or, *Jacob*.²Gr. *presence*.³Or, *the consummation of the age*.⁴Gr. *you being brought*.⁵Or, *betrayed*.⁶Or, *shall they put to death*.⁷Or, *steadfastness*.⁸Or, *lives*.⁹Or, *these good tidings*.¹⁰Gr. *inhabited earth*.¹¹Dan. ix. 27; xi. 31; xii. 11.¹²Or, *a holy place*.¹³Gr. *the inhabited earth*.¹⁴Or, *him*.¹⁵Or, *them*.¹⁶Or, *vultures*.¹⁷Or, *expiring*.¹⁸Many ancient authorities read *with a**great trumpet, and they shall gather &c.*¹⁹Or, *a trumpet of great sound*.²⁰Or, *it*.²¹Many authoritiesomit *neither the Son*.²²Some ancient authorities omit *and p ray*.²³Gr. *bondservants*.²⁴Or, *But this ye know*.²⁵Gr. *digged through*.²⁶Gr. *bondservant*.²⁷Or, *severely scourge him*.²⁸Or,*torches.*²⁹Or, *Depart from me under a curse*.

145. WHILE JESUS ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES IS AGAIN WARNING
THE DISCIPLES OF HIS IMPENDING CRUCIFIXION,
THE RULERS IN JERUSALEM PLOT HIS DEATH

Wednesday afternoon

Matt. 26:1-5

Mark 14:1-2

Luke 22:1-2

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these words, he said unto his disciples, 2 Ye know that after two days the passover

cometh, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified. 3 Then were gathered together the chief priests,

and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas; 4 and they took counsel together

1 Now after two days was the feast of the passover and the unleavened bread:

and the chief priests and the scribes

sought

1 Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover.

2 And the chief priests and the scribes

sought

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22
that they might take Jesus by subt- lety, and kill him. 5 But they said,	how they might take him with subtlety, and kill him: 2 for they said, Not during the feast, lest hap- py there shall be a tumult of the people.	how they might put him to death; for they feared the people.
Not during the feast, lest a tumult arise among the people.		

146. MARY OF BETHANY ANOINTS JESUS IN THE
HOUSE OF SIMON A LEPER

Bethany, Wednesday evening

Matt. 26:6-13	Mark 14:3-9	John 12:2-8
6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,	3 And while he was in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman hav- ing ² an alabaster cruse of exceeding	2 So they made him a supper there: and Mar- tha served; but Lazarus was one of them that 'sat at meat with him. 3 Mary therefore took
7 there came unto him a woman hav- ing ² an alabaster cruse of exceeding	² an alabaster cruse containing*	

* The standard text reads "of". By substituting the word "containing", which conveys the same meaning, the composite narrative is improved.

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14		John 12
<p>precious ointment, and she poured it upon his head, as he sat at meat.</p>	<p>ointment of pure nard very costly; and she brake the cruse, and poured it over his head.</p>		<p>a pound of ointment of pure nard, very precious, and [she] anoint- ed the feet of Je- sus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odor of the ointment.</p>
<p>8 But when the disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what pur- pose is this waste?</p>	<p>4 But there were some that had indigna- tion among them- selves, saying, To what purpose hath this waste of the oint- ment been made?</p>		
<p>9 For this ointment might have been sold</p>	<p>5 For this ointment might have been sold</p>		<p>4 And* Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, that should be- tray him, saith, 5 Why was not this ointment sold</p>

* The standard version reads "But". This slight departure (which does not materially affect the meaning of John's record) improves the composite narrative.

<p>Matt. 26 for much, and given to the poor.</p> <p>10 But Jesus perceiving it said unto them,</p> <p>Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me. 11 For ye have the poor always with you: but me ye have not always.</p> <p>12 For in that she ¹⁰pour- ed this ointment upon my body, she did it</p>	<p>Mark 14 for above three hundred shillings, and given to the poor.</p> <p>And they murmured a- gainst her.</p> <p>6 But Jesus said,</p> <p>Let her alone; why trou- ble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me. For ye have the poor always with you, and whenso- ever ye will ye can do them good: but me ye have not always.</p> <p>8 She hath done what she could; she hath anointed</p>		<p>John 12 for three hundred 'shillings, and given to the poor? 6 Now this he said, not because he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and having the 'bag 'took away what was put there- in.</p> <p>7 Jesus therefore said, ⁹Suffer her to keep it against the day of my burying.</p> <p>8 For the poor ye have always with you; but me ye have not always.</p>
--	---	--	--

Matt. 26

Mark 14

**to prepare
me for burial.**

**my body before-
hand**

for the burying.

13 Verily I say unto
you, Wheresoever
"this gospel shall
be preached in the
whole world, that
also which this wo-
man hath done shall
be spoken of for a
memorial of her.

**9 And verily I say
unto you, Where-
soever the gospel
shall be preached
throughout the
whole world, that
also which this
woman hath done
shall be spoken of
for a memorial
of her.**

¹Gr. reclined. ²Or, a flask. ³Or, liquid nard. ⁴Gr. reclined at table. ⁵Or, deliver him up.
⁶The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny, or nearly seventeen cents.
⁷Or, box. ⁸Or, carried what was put therein. ⁹Or, let her alone: it was that she might keep it. ¹⁰Gr.
cast. ¹¹Or, these good tidings.

147. JUDAS BARGAINS WITH THE JEWISH RULERS TO BETRAY JESUS

Jerusalem, Wednesday night

Matt. 26:14-16

Mark 14:10-11

Luke 22:3-6

14 Then one of
the twelve, who
was called Ju-
das Iscariot, went
unto the chief

10 And Judas Iscari-
ot, 'he that was
one of the twelve,
went away unto the

**3 And Satan en-
tered into Judas
who was called
Iscariot, being of
the number of
the twelve. 4 And
he went away,
and communed
with the chief**

Matt. 26
priests, 15 and

said,
What are ye will-
ing to give me,
and I will ²deliver
him unto you?
And they weighed
unto him thirty
pieces of silver.

16 And

from that
time he sought
opportunity

to
²deliver him unto
them.

Mark 14
chief priests,

that
he might ²deliver
him unto them.
11 And they,
when they heard
it, were glad,
and promised to
give him money.
And he

sought

how he might con-
veniently ²deliver
him unto them.

Luke 21
priests and cap-
tains,

how he
might ²deliver him
unto them. 5 And
they were glad,
and covenanted to
give him money.

6 And he consent-
ed, and

sought op-
portunity to ²deliver
him unto them
³in the absence
of the multitude.

¹Gr. the one of the twelve.

²Or, betray.

³Or, without tumult

148. THE PREPARATION FOR THE PASSOVER MEAL IN AN UPPER ROOM

Jerusalem, Thursday

Matt. 26:17-19	Mark 14:12-16	Luke 22:7-13
17 Now on the first	12 And on	7 And
day of unleavened	the	the day of
bread the disciples	first day of	unleavened bread
came to Jesus, say-	un-	came, on which
ing, Where wilt thou	leavened bread,	the passover
that we make ready	when they sacrificed	must be sacri-
for thee to eat the	the passover, his	ficed. 8 And he
passover? 18 And	disciples say unto	sent Peter and
he said, Go into	him, Where wilt	John, saying, Go
the city to such	thou that we go and	and make ready
a man, and say	make ready that	for us the pass-
	thou mayest eat the	over, that we may
	passover? 13 And	eat. 9 And they
	he sendeth two of	said unto him,
	his disciples, and	where wilt thou
	saith unto them, Go	that we make
	into the city, and	ready? 10 And
	there shall meet	he said unto
	you a man bearing a	them, Behold,
	pitcher of water:	when ye are en-
	follow him; 14 and	tered into the
	wheresoever he shall	city, there shall
	enter in, say	meet you a man
		bearing a pitcher
		of water; follow
		him into the
		house whereinto
		he goeth. 11 And
		yeshall say

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22
<p>un- to him, The Teacher saith,</p>	<p>to the master of the house, The Teacher saith,</p>	<p>unto the master of the house, The Teacher saith</p>
<p>My time is at hand ;</p>	<p>Where is my guest-chamber, where I shall</p>	<p>unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber,</p>
<p>I keep the passover at thy house with my disciples. 19 And</p>	<p>eat the passover with my disciples? 15 And he will himself show</p>	<p>where I shall eat the passover with my dis- ciples? 12 And he will</p>
<p>the disciples</p>	<p>you a large upper room furnished and ready: and there make ready for us. 16 And the disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them : and</p>	<p>show you a large upper room furnish- ed: there make ready. 13 And they went, and found as he had said unto</p>
<p>did as Jesus appoint- ed them; and they made ready the passover.</p>	<p>they made ready the passover.</p>	<p>them: and they made ready the passover.</p>

**149. AT THE BEGINNING OF THE PASSOVER MEAL JESUS
WASHES THE FEET OF HIS JEALOUS DISCIPLES, AND
REBUKES THEM FOR THEIR SELFISH PRIDE**

Jerusalem, Thursday evening

Matt. 26:20

Mark 14:17

Luke 22:14-18, 24-30

John 13:1-20

20 Now when even
was come, he was

'sitting at meat with

the twelve ²disciples;

**17 And when it
was evening he
cometh with the
twelve.**

**14 And when the
hour was come,
he sat down,
and the apostles
with him. 15 And

he**

1 Now before the
feast of the passover,

**Jesus knowing
that his hour was
come that he
should depart out**

of this world unto the Father, having loved his own that were in the world,
he loved them 'unto the end. 2 And during supper, the devil having
already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to 'betray him,
3 *Jesus*, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and

**that he came
forth from God,
and goeth unto
God,**

**said unto them,
With desire I have
desired to eat**

this passover with you before I suffer: 16 for I say unto you, I shall not eat
it, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. 17 And he received a cup, and
when he had given thanks, he said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves:
18 for I say unto you, I shall not drink from henceforth of the fruit of the
vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

Luke 22

John 13

24 And there arose also a contention among them, which of them was accounted to be ⁵greatest. 25 And he

4 riseth from supper, and layeth aside his

garments; and he took a towel, and girded himself. 5 Then he poureth water into the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded. 6 So he cometh to Simon Peter. He saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt understand hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10 Jesus saith to him, He that is bathed needeth not ⁵save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11 For he knew him that should ⁵betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So when he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, and ⁵sat down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13 Ye call me, Teacher, and, Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. 14 If I then, the Lord and the Teacher, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15 For I have given you an example, that ye also should do as I have done to you. 16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, A ⁵servant is

said unto them,

not greater than his lord; neither ⁵one that is sent greater than he that sent him.

The kings of the Gentiles have lord-

		Luke 22 ship over them ; and they that	John 13
have authority over them are called Benefactors. 26 But ye <i>shall</i> not <i>be</i> so : but he that is the greater among you, let him become as the younger ; and			
		he that is chief, as he that doth serve.	17 If ye know these things, blessed are ye if ye do them.
		27 For which is greater, he that ¹⁰ sitteth	
at meat, or he that serveth ? is not he that ¹⁰ sitteth at meat ? but I am in the midst of you as he that serveth. 28 But ye are they that have continued with me in my temptations ; 29 and ¹¹ I appoint unto you a kingdom, even as my Father appointed unto me, 30 that ye may eat and drink at my table			
		in my kingdom ; and ye shall sit on thrones judg- ing the twelve tribes of Israel.	18 I speak not of you all : I know whom I ¹² have
chosen : but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth ¹³ my bread lifted up his heel against me [Ps. 41:9]. 19 From henceforth I tell you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am <i>he</i> . 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me ; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.			

¹Or, reclining at table. ²Many authorities, some ancient, omit *disciples*. ³Or, to the uttermost.
⁴Or, deliver him up. ⁵Gr. greater. ⁶Some ancient authorities omit *save*, and *his feet*. ⁷Gr. reclined.
⁸Gr. bondservant. ⁹Gr. an apostle. ¹⁰Gr. reclineth. ¹¹Or, I appoint unto you, even as my Father
appointed unto me a kingdom, that ye may eat and drink &c. ¹²Or, chose. ¹³Many ancient authorities
read his bread with me.

**150. DURING THE PASSOVER MEAL JESUS MAKES A FINAL
UNSUCCESSFUL APPEAL TO JUDAS, BY INTIMATING
THAT HE IS AWARE OF HIS INTENTIONS**

Jerusalem, Thursday evening

Matt. 26:21-25	Mark 14:18-21	Luke 22:21-23	John 13:21-30
21 and as they were	18 And		21 When Jesus
eating, he said, Ver-	as they 'sat		had thus said,
ily I say unto you,	and were eating,		
that one of you shall			he was troubled
betray me. 24 The	Jesus said, Verily I		in the spirit,
Son of man goeth,	say unto you,		and testified, and
even as it is written			said, Verily, verily,
of him: but woe unto	One of		I say unto
that man through	you shall betray		you,
whom the Son of	me, even he that		that one of
man is betrayed!	eateth with me.		you shall betray me.
good were it ² for	21 For the Son of	22 For the Son	
that man if he had	man goeth,	of man indeed	
not been born.		goeth, as it hath	
	even as	been determined:	
	it is written of		
	him: but woe	but woe unto that	
	unto that man	man through whom	
	through whom	he is betrayed!	
	the Son of man		
	is betrayed! good		
	were it ² for that		
	man if he had		
	not been born.		

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 13
<p>22 And they were exceeding sorrowful,</p> <p>and [they] began to say unto him every one,</p> <p>Is it I, Lord?</p> <p>23 And he answered and said, He that dipped his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.</p>	<p>19 They began to be sorrowful, and</p> <p>to say unto him one by one,</p> <p>Is it I? 20 And he said unto them, <i>It is</i> one of the twelve, he that dippeth with me in the dish.</p>	<p>21 But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table.</p> <p>23 And they began to question among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.</p>	<p>22 The disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.</p>

Matt. 26

John 13

23 There
was at the table
reclining in Jesus'

bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. 24 Simon Peter therefore beckoneth to him, and saith unto him, Tell *us* who it is of whom he speaketh. 25 He leaning back, as he was, on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it? 26 Jesus therefore answereth, He it is, for whom I shall dip the sop, and give it him. So when he had dipped the sop, he taketh

and giveth it to
Judas, *the son of*
Simon Iscariot.

25 And Judas,
who betrayed
him, answered
and said, Is it I,
Rabbi? He saith
unto him, Thou
hast said.

27 And after the
sop, then entered
Satan into him.

Jesus therefore saith unto him, What thou doest, do quickly. 28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. 29 For some thought, because Judas had the ³bag, that Jesus said unto him, Buy what things we have need of for the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. 30 He then having received the sop went out straightway: and it was night.

¹Gr. reclined. ²Gr. for him if that man. ³Or, box.

151. AFTER THE DEPARTURE OF JUDAS, JESUS INSTITUTES THE ORDINANCE OF THE LORD'S SUPPER

Jerusalem, Thursday night

Matt. 26:26-29

Mark 14:22-25

Luke 22:19-20

John 13:31-32

26 And as they
were eating,

Jesus
took ²bread, and
blessed, and
brake it; and
he gave to
the disciples, and
said, Take, eat;

this is my body.

27 And he took ⁴a
cup,

22 And as they
were eating,

he
took ²bread, and
when he had blessed,
he brake it, and gave
to them, and said,
Take ye:

this is my

body.

23 And he
took a cup,

19 And he took
²bread, and when
he had given thanks,
he brake it, and
gave to them,
saying, This is my

**body ³which is
given for you:
this do in re-
membrance of
me.**

20 And the cup

31 When there-
fore he was
gone out, Jesus
saith, Now 'is
the Son of man
glorified, and
God 'is glorified
in him; 32 and
God shall glorify
him in himself,
and straightway
shall he glorify
him.

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22
		in like manner after supper,
and gave thanks, and	and when he had given thanks, he	
gave to them, saying, Drink ye all of it;	gave to them :	saying,
	and they all drank of it. 24 And he said unto them,	
28 for this is my blood of the ² covenant, which is poured	This is my blood of the ² covenant, which is poured	This cup is the new covenant in my blood,
out for many unto remission of sins.	ed out for many.	even that which is poured out for you.
29 But I say unto you, I shall not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine,	25 Verily I say unto you, I shall no more drink of the fruit of the vine,	
until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.	until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God.	

¹Or, was. ²Or, a loaf. ³Some ancient authorities omit which is given for you . . . which is poured out for you. ⁴Some ancient authorities read the cup. ⁵Many ancient authorities insert new.

152. JESUS BEGINS HIS FAREWELL DISCOURSE TO THE DISCIPLES IN THE UPPER ROOM

Jerusalem, Thursday night

Matt. 26:31-35

Mark 14:27-31

Luke 22:31-38

John 13:33-14:31

31 Then saith
Jesus

unto them,

27 And Jesus saith

unto them,

33 Little children,
yet a little while
I am with you.

Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you. 34 A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; 'even as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow afterwards. 37 Peter saith unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee even now? I will lay down my life for thee. 38 Jesus answereth, Wilt thou

All ye shall be

of-
fended in me
this night: for
it is written, I
will smite the
shepherd, and the
sheep of the flock
shall be scattered
abroad [Zech. 13:7].

All

ye shall be

of-

fended: for it is
written, I will smite
the shepherd, and
the sheep shall be
scattered abroad.

lay down thy life
for me? Verily,
verily, I say unto
thee,

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 13
<p>32 But after I am raised up, I will go before you into Galilee. 33 But Peter answered and said unto him, If all shall be ²offended in thee, I will never be ²offended.</p>	<p>28 Howbeit, after I am raised up, I will go before you into Galilee. 29 But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be ²offended, yet will not I.</p> <p>30 And Jesus saith unto him,</p>	<p>31 Simon, Simon, behold, Satan ¹asked to have</p>	
<p>you, that he might sift you as wheat: 32 but I made supplication for thee, that thy faith fail not; and do thou, when once thou hast turned again, establish thy brethren. 33 And he said unto him, Lord, with thee I am ready to go</p> <p>34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. 35 Peter saith unto him, Even if I must die with</p>	<p>Verily I say unto thee,</p> <p>that thou to-day, even this night, before the cock crow twice, shalt deny me thrice.</p> <p>31 But he spake exceeding vehemently, If I must die with</p>	<p>both to prison and to death. 34 And he said, I tell thee, Peter,</p> <p>the cock shall not crow this day, until thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.</p>	<p>The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.</p>

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 14
thee, <i>yet</i> will I not deny thee, Likewise also said all the disciples.	thee, I will not deny thee. And in like manner also said they all.	 35 And he said unto them, When I sent you	

forth without purse, and wallet, and shoes, lacked ye anything? And they said, Nothing. 36 And he said unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise a wallet; 'and he that hath none, let him sell his cloak, and buy a sword. 37 For I say unto you, that this which is written must be fulfilled in me, And he was reckoned with transgressors [Is. 53:12]: for that which concerneth me hath fulfilment. 38 And they said, Lord, be-

hold, here are two
swords. And he
said unto them,
It is enough.

1 Let not your
heart be troub-

led: 'believe in God, believe also in me. 2 In my Father's house are many 'mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. 4 'And whither I go, ye know the way. 5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; how know we the way? 6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no one cometh unto the Father, but 'by me. 7 If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also: from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. 8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, show us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and dost thou not know me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; how sayest thou, Show us the Father? 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I say unto you I speak not from myself: but the Father abiding in me doeth his works. 11 Believe me that I

John 14
am in the Father,
and the Father in

me : or else believe me for the very works' sake. 12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also ; and greater *works* than these shall he do ; because I go unto the Father. 13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If ye shall ask ¹⁰anything in my name, that will I do. 15 If ye love me, ye will keep my commandments. 16 And I will ¹¹pray the Father, and he shall give you another ¹²Comforter, that he may be with you for ever, 17 *even* the Spirit of truth : whom the world cannot receive ; for it beholdeth him not, neither knoweth him : ye know him ; for he abideth with you, and shall be in you. 18 I will not leave you ¹³desolate : I come unto you. 19 Yet a little while, and the world beholdeth me no more ; but ye behold me : because I live, ¹⁴ye shall live also. 20 In that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. 21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me : and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself unto him. 22 Judas (not Iscariot) saith unto him, Lord, what is come to pass that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world ? 23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my word : and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. 24 He that loveth me not keepeth not my words : and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's who sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, while yet abiding with you. 26 But the ¹²Comforter, *even* the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said unto you. 27 Peace I leave with you ; my peace I give unto you : not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be fearful. 28 Ye heard how I said to you, I go away, and I come unto you. If ye loved me, ye would have rejoiced, because I go unto the Father : for the Father is greater than I. 29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe. 30 I will no more speak much with you, for the prince of the world cometh : and he hath nothing ¹⁵in me ; 31 but that the world may know that I love the Father, and as the Father gave me command ment,

John 14
even so I do.
Arise, let us go.
hence.

¹Or, even as I loved you, that ye also may love one another. ²Gr. caused to stumble. ³Or, obtained you by asking. ⁴Or, and he that hath no sword, let him sell his cloak, and buy one. ⁵Gr. end. ⁶Or, ye believe in God. ⁷Or, abiding-places. ⁸Many ancient authorities read And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. ⁹Or, through. ¹⁰Many ancient authorities add me. ¹¹Gr. make request of. ¹²Or, Advocate. Or, Helper. Gr. Paraclete. ¹³Or, orphans. ¹⁴Or, and ye shall live. ¹⁵Or, in me. 31 But that &c. ... I do, arise &c.

153. LEAVING THE UPPER ROOM, JESUS CONTINUES HIS
FAREWELL DISCOURSE TO THE DISCIPLES ON
THE WAY TO GETHSEMANE

Thursday midnight

Matt. 26:30	Mark 14:26	Luke 22:39	John 15:16
30 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.	26 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the mount of Olives.	39 And he came out, and went, as his custom was, unto the mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him.	1 [And he said unto them,] I am the true vine, and

my Father is the husbandman. 2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he cleanseth it, that it may bear more fruit. 3 Already ye are clean because of the word which I have spoken unto you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; so neither can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that

John 15
abideth in me,
and I in him, the

same beareth much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing. 6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8 Herein 'is my Father glorified, ²that ye bear much fruit; and so shall ye be my disciples. 9 Even as the Father hath loved me, I also have loved you: abide ye in my love. 10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy may be in you, and *that* your joy may be made full. 12 This is my commandment, that ye love one another, even as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14 Ye are my friends, if ye do the things which I command you. 15 No longer do I call you 'servants; for the 'servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I heard from my Father I have made known unto you. 16 Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that ye should go and bear fruit, and *that* your fruit should abide: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. 17 These things I command you, that ye may love one another. 18 If the world hateth you, ²ye know that it hath hated me before *it hated* you. 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but because ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the word that I said unto you, A 'servant is not greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they kept my word, they will keep yours also. 21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sin. 23 He that hateth me hateth my Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works which none other did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. 25 But *this cometh to pass*, that the word may be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause [Ps. 35:19; 69:4]. 26 But when the 'Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of

John 15-16
truth, which 'pro-
ceedeth from the

Father, he shall bear witness of me: 27 ^aand ye also bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

1 These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be caused to stumble. 2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the hour cometh, that whosoever killeth you shall think that he offereth service unto God. 3 And these things will they do, because they have not known the Father, nor me. 4 But these things have I spoken unto you, that when their hour is come, ye may remember them, how that I told you. And these things I said not unto you from the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I go unto him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6 But because I have spoken these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth: It is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away, the 'Comforter will not come unto you; but if I go, I will send him unto you. 8 And he, when he is come, will convict the world in respect of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: 9 of sin, because they believe not on me; 10 of righteousness, because I go to the Father, and ye behold me no more; 11 of judgment, because the prince of this world hath been judged. 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he shall guide you into all the truth: for he shall not speak from himself; but what things soever he shall hear, *these* shall he speak: and he shall declare unto you the things that are to come. 14 He shall glorify me: for he shall take of mine, and shall declare *it* unto you. 15 All things whatsoever the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he taketh of mine, and shall declare *it* unto you. 16 A little while, and ye behold me no more; and again a little while, and ye shall see me. 17 *Some* of his disciples therefore said one to another, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye behold me not; and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? We know not what he saith. 19 Jesus perceived that they were desirous to ask him, and he said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves concerning this, that I said, A little while, and ye behold me not, and again a little while, and ye shall see me? 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the

John 16

world shall re-
joice: ye shall be

sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. 21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but when she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for the joy that a man is born into the world. 22 And ye therefore now have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no one taketh away from you. 23 And in that day ye shall ⁹ask me no question. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If ye shall ask anything of the Father, he will give it you in my name. 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be made full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ¹⁰dark sayings: the hour cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in ¹⁰dark sayings, but shall tell you plainly of the Father. 26 In that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will ¹¹pray the Father for you; 27 for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from the Father. 28 I came out from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go unto the Father. 29 His disciples say, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ¹²dark saying. 30 Now know we that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. 31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? 32 Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. 33 These things have I spoken unto you, that in me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

¹Or, was. ²Many ancient authorities read *that ye bear much fruit, and be my disciples.* ³Gr. bondservants. ⁴Gr. bondservant. ⁵Or, know ye. ⁶Or, Advocate. Or, Helper. Gr. Paraclete. ⁷Or, goeth forth from. ⁸Or, and bear ye also witness. ⁹Or, ask me nothing. Comp. ver. 26; ch. xiv. 13, 20. ¹⁰Or, parables. ¹¹Gr. make request of. ¹²Or, parable.

154. CHRIST'S INTERCESSORY PRAYER

On the way to Gethsemane

John 17

1 These things
spake Jesus; and
lifting up his eyes

to heaven, he said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that the Son may glorify thee: 2 even as thou gavest him authority over all flesh, that 'to all whom thou hast given him, he should give eternal life. 3 And this is life eternal, that they should know thee the only true God, and him whom thou didst send, *even* Jesus Christ. 4 I glorified thee on the earth, having accomplished the work which thou hast given me to do. 5 And now, Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. 6 I manifested thy name unto the men whom thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them to me; and they have kept thy word. 7 Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are from thee: 8 for the words which thou gavest me I have given unto them; and they received *them*, and knew of a truth that I came forth from thee, and they believed that thou didst send me. 9 I 'pray for them: I 'pray not for the world, but for those whom thou hast given me; for they are thine: 10 and all things that are mine are thine, and thine are mine: and I am glorified in them. 11 And I am no more in the world, and these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep them in thy name which thou hast given me, that they may be one, even as we *are*. 12 While I was with them, I kept them in thy name which thou hast given me: and I guarded them, and not one of them perished, but the son of perdition; 'that the scripture might be fulfilled. 13 But now I come to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy made full in themselves. 14 I have given them thy word; and the world hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15 I 'pray not that thou shouldest take them 'from the world, but that thou shouldest keep them 'from 'the evil one. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am

John 17
not of the world.
17 ⁶Sanctify them

in the truth: thy word is truth. 18 As thou didst send me into the world, even so sent I them into the world. 19 And for their sakes I ⁵sanctify myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified in truth. 20 Neither for these only do I ⁷pray, but for them also that believe on me through their word; 21 that they may all be one; even as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be in us: that the world may believe that thou didst send me. 22 And the glory which thou hast given me I have given unto them; that they may be one, even as we are one; 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one; that the world may know that thou didst send me, and lovedst them, even as thou lovedst me. 24 Father, ¹I desire that they also whom thou hast given me be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. 25 O righteous Father, the world knew thee not, but I knew thee; and these knew that thou didst send me; 26 and I made known unto them thy name, and will make it known; that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in them, and I in them.

¹Gr. whatsoever thou hast given him, to them he &c. ²Gr. make request. ³Ps. xii. 9? ⁴Gr. out of. ⁵Or, evil. ⁶Or, Consecrate. ⁷Gr. that which thou hast given me, I desire that where I am, they also may be with me, that &c.

155. THE AGONY IN THE GARDEN OF GETHSEMANE

Matt. 26:36-46	Mark 14:32-42	Luke 22:40-46	John 18:1
36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto	32 And they come	40 And	1 When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook ² Kidron,

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 18
a place called Geth-	unto ^a place		where was a
semane, and saith	which		garden,
	was named Geth-		
semane, and saith	semane: and		
		when he	
unto his disciples, Sit	he	was at the place,	into which
	saith unto his	he said unto them,	
ye here,	disciples, Sit ye		
	here,		
while I go	while I pray.		
yonder and pray.	33 And he tak-		
37 And he took	eth with him		
with him Peter	Peter and James		
and	and John,		
the two sons			
of Zebedee, and			he entered,
	and		
began to be	began to be		himself
	greatly amazed,		and his disciples.
and	and		
sor-	sore troubled.		
rowful and sore	34 And he saith		
troubled. 38 Then	unto them, My		
saith he unto	soul is exceeding		
them, My soul	sorrowful even un-		
is exceeding sor-	to death: abide		
rowful, even unto	ye here, and watch.		
death: abide ye			
here, and watch		Pray that ye enter	
with me.		not into tempta-	
		tion.	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22
39 And he went forward a little, and	35 And he went forward a little, and	41 And he
fell	fell on the ground,	was parted from them about a stone's cast; and he
on his face, and prayed,	and prayed	kneeled down
	that, if it were possible, the hour might pass away from him. 36	and prayed,
saying, My Father,	And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee;	42 say-
if it be possible, let this cup pass away from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.	remove this cup from me: howbeit not what I will, but what thou wilt.	ing, Father,
		if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. 43 *And there appeared
40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them sleeping,	37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping,	from his prayer, he came unto the disciples, and found them sleeping for sorrow,

unto him an angel from heaven, strengthening him. 44 And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly; and his sweat became as it were great drops of blood falling down upon the ground. 45 And when he rose up

<p>Matt. 26 and saith unto Peter,</p> <p>What, could ye not watch with me</p> <p>one hour? 41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temp- tation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.</p> <p>42 Again a second time he went away, and prayed,</p> <p>saying, My Father, if this cannot pass away, except I drink it, thy will be done.</p> <p>43 And he came again and found them sleeping, for their eyes were heavy.</p>	<p>Mark 14 and saith unto Peter, Si- mon,</p> <p>sleepest thou? couldst thou not watch</p> <p>one hour?</p> <p>38 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into tempta- tion: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.</p> <p>39 And again he went away, and prayed, saying the same words.</p> <p>40 And again he came, and found them sleeping, for their eyes were very heavy; and they knew not what to answer him.</p>	<p>Luke 22 46 and said unto them,</p> <p>Why sleep ye? rise</p> <p>and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.</p>
--	--	--

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26

Mark 14

44 And he left them again, and went away, and prayed a third time, saying again the same words. 45 Then cometh he to the disciples,

and saith unto them, ⁷Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. **46** Arise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

⁴¹ And he cometh

the third time, and saith unto them, 'Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough; the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 42 Arise, let us be going: behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

¹Or, ravine. Gr. winter-torrent.

²Or, of the Cedars.

³Gr. an enclosed piece of ground.

⁴Or,

Jacob. ⁵Many ancient authorities omit ver. 43, 44.

⁶Or, Watch ye, and pray that ye enter not.

⁷Or,

Do ye sleep on, then, and take your rest?

C. THE ARREST, TRIAL, CRUCIFIXION AND BURIAL OF JESUS

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY OF THE PASSOVER WEEK

156. JESUS IS BETRAYED, ARRESTED AND FORSAKEN

The Garden of Gethsemane, Friday, long before dawn

Matt. 26:47-56

Mark 14:43-52

Luke 22:47-53

John 18:2-12

47 And

43 And

47 While he yet
spake, behold, a mul-
titude, and he that
was called Judas, one
of the twelve,

2 Now Judas al-
so, who 'betrayed
him, knew the
place: for Je-
sus oft-times
resorted thither
with his disci-
ples. 3 Judas then,
having received
the 'band of sol-
diers, and offic-
ers from the chief
priests and the
Pharisees,

went

before them; and

straight-

way,

while he
yet spake, cometh

while he
yet spake, lo,

Judas, one of the
twelve, came, and
with him

Judas, one of the
twelve,

and with

him

a great
multitude with

a multitude
with swords and

he

com-
eth thither

with

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 18
swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people. 48 Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he: take him. 49 And	staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. 44 Now he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomso- ever I shall kiss, that is he; take him, and lead him away safely. 45 And when he was come,	drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. 48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?	lanterns and torches and wea- pons. 4 Jesus therefore, know- ing all the things 5b And Judas also, who 'be-
straightway he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Rabbi; and 'kissed him.	straight- way he came to him, and saith, Rabbi; and 'kiss- ed him. 46 And		
that were coming upon him, went forth, and saith unto them, Whom seek ye? 5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am <i>he</i> . 6 When therefore he said unto them, I am <i>he</i> , they went backward, and fell to the ground. 7 Again therefore he asked them, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. 8 Jesus answered, I told you that I am <i>he</i> ; if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way: 9 that the word might be fulfilled which he spake, Of those whom thou hast given me I lost not one.			

Matt. 26

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, *do* that for which thou art come. Then they came and laid hands on Jesus,

and took him. 51 And behold, one of them that were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and smote the 'servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.

52 Then saith Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place:

for all they that take the sword

Mark 14

they laid hands on him,

and took him.

47 But a certain one of them that stood by drew his sword, and smote the 'servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.

Luke 22

50 And a certain one of them smote the 'servant of the high priest, and struck off his right ear.

49 And when they that

And he touched his ear, and healed him.

John 18

trayed him, was standing with them.

10 Simon Peter therefore having a sword drew it, and struck the high priest's 'servant, and cut off his right ear. Now the 'servant's name was Malchus.

11 Jesus therefore said unto Peter, Put up the sword into the sheath:

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 18
<p>shall perish with the sword. 53 Or thinkest thou that I cannot beseech my Father, and he shall even now send me more than twelve legions of angels?</p>			<p>the cup which the Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?</p>
<p>54 How then should the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?</p>			<p>12 So the 'band and the 'chief captain, and the officers of the Jews, seized Jesus and bound him,</p>
<p>55 In that hour said Jesus to the multitudes,</p>	<p>48 And Jesus answered and said unto them,</p>	<p>52 And Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and elders, that were come against him,</p>	
<p>Are ye come out as against a robber</p>	<p>Are ye come out, as against a robber,</p>	<p>Are ye come out, as against a robber,</p>	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22
with swords	with	with swords and
and staves to seize	swords and staves	staves?
me? I sat daily in	to seize me?	
the temple teaching,	49 I was daily	53 When
and ye took me	with you	I was daily with
not. 56 But	in the	you
all	temple teaching,	in the temple,
this is come	and ye took me	ye stretched not
to pass, that	not: but	forth your hands
the scriptures		against me: but
of the prophets	this is done	
might be fulfilled.	that the scriptures	
	might be ful-	
	filled. 50 And	

¹Or, delivered him up.
military tribune. Gr. chiliarch.

²Or, cohort.

³Gr. kissed him much.

⁴Gr, bondservant.

⁵Or,

157. JESUS IS FIRST EXAMINED BY ANNAS, THE EX-HIGH PRIEST

Friday, before dawn

Matt. 26:57 ^a	Mark 14:53 ^a	Luke 22:54 ^a	John 18:13-14, 19-23
57 And they that had taken Jesus	53 And they	54 And they	
		seized	
led him away to	Jesus away to	him, and led him away, and brought him in- to	
the house of Caiaphas	the high priest:	the high priest's house.	
the high priest,			13 and led him to Annas first; for he was father

in law to Caiaphas, who was high priest that year. 14 Now Caiaphas was he that gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

19 The high priest therefore asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his teaching. 20 Jesus answered him, I have spoken openly to the world; I ever taught in 'synagogues, and in the temple, where all the Jews come together; and in secret spake I nothing. 21 Why askest thou me? ask them that have heard me, what I spake unto them: behold, these know the things which I said. 22 And when he had said this, one of the officers standing by struck Jesus 'with his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so? 23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

¹Gr. *synagogue*. ²Or *with a rod*.

**158. PETER AND ANOTHER DISCIPLE (PROBABLY JOHN) GAIN
ADMISSION TO THE COURT OF THE HIGH PRIEST'S RESIDENCE**

Matt. 26:58	Mark 14:54	Luke 22:54b-55	John 18:15-16, 18
58 But Peter fol- lowed him afar off, unto the court of the high priest, and entered in,	54 And Peter had followed him afar off, even within, into the court of the high priest ;	54b But Peter ed follow- afar off. 55 And	15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and <i>so did</i> another disciple. Now that disci- ple was known unto the high priest, and en- tered in with Je- sus into the court of the high priest; 16 but Peter was standing at the door without. So the other dis- ciple, who was known unto the high priest, went out and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. 18 Now the 'servants and the officers were standing

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 18
		when they had kindled a fire	there, having made ²a fire of coals;
		in the midst of the court,	
			for it was cold; and they were warming themselves: and Peter also was with them,
		and [<i>when they</i>] had sat down together, Peter sat in the midst of	
and sat	and he was sitting with		
		the officers,	
with the officers,		them.	
to see the end.	and [<i>he was</i>] warming himself in the light of the fire.		
			standing and warming himself.

¹Gr. bondservants. ²Gr. a fire of charcoal.

159. JESUS IS INFORMALLY TRIED AND CONDEMNED BY CAIAPHAS AND THE SANHEDRIN

The high priest's residence. Friday, before dawn

Matt. 26:57b,59-68	Mark 14:53b,55-65	Luke 22:63-65	John 18:24
[57 And they that had taken Jesus led him away to <i>the</i>	[53 And they led Jesus away to the		24 Annas there-fore sent him bound unto Cai-

Matt. 26

house of Caiaphas the
high priest,] where
the scribes and the
elders were gathered
together.

59 Now
the chief priests
and the whole
council sought
false witness a-
gainst Jesus, that
they might put
him to death; **60**
and they found it
not, though many
false witnesses
came.

**But after-
ward came two,**

61 and said, This
man said, I am
able to destroy the
'temple of God,

Mark 14

high priest:]

and
there come to-
gether with him
all the chief
priests and the
elders and the
scribes.

55 Now

the chief priests
and the whole coun-
cil sought witness
against Jesus to
put him to death;
and found it not.

56 For many bare
false witness a-
gainst him, and
their witness a-
greed not to-
gether.

57 And there
stood up certain,

and bare false
witness against
him, saying, **58**
We heard him
say, I will des-
troy this

'temple

John 18

aphas the high
priest.

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14
and to build it in	that is made
three days. 62 And	with hands, and
the high priest stood	in three days I
up, and said unto	will build an-
him, Answerest thou	other made with-
nothing? what is it	out hands. 59
which these witness	And not even so
against thee? 63 But	did their witness
Jesus held his peace.	agree together.
And the high priest	60 And the high
said unto him,	priest stood up
	in the midst,
	and asked Jesus,
	saying, Answer-
	est thou no-
	thing? what is
	it which these
	witness against
	thee? 61 But he
	held his peace,
	and answered
	nothing. Again
	the high priest
	asked him, and
	saith unto him,
	Art thou the
	Christ, the Son
	of the Blessed?
I ad-	
jure thee by	
the living God,	
that thou tell	
us whether	
thou art the	
Christ, the Son	
of God. 64 Jesus	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22
<p>saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless</p>	<p>62 And Jesus said, I am: and</p>	
<p>I say unto you, Hence- forth ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.</p>	<p>ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of Power, and coming with the clouds of heaven.</p>	
<p>65 Then the high priest rent his garments, say- ing, He hath spok- en blasphemy: what further need have we of wit- nesses? behold, now ye have heard the blasphemy:</p>	<p>63 And the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What further need have we of wit- nesses? 64 Ye have heard the blasphemy:</p>	
<p>66 what think ye? They answered and said, He is ²wor- thy of death.</p>	<p>what think ye? And they all con- demned him to be ²worthy of death.</p>	
<p>Then did they</p>	<p>65 And some be- gan to</p>	<p>63 And the men that held ³Jesus mocked him, and beat him.</p>
<p>spit in his face and buffet him: and</p>	<p>spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him,</p>	<p>64 And</p>
<p>some</p>		<p>they blindfolded him, and</p>

THE PASSION WEEK

<p>Matt. 26 smote him 'with the palms of their hands,</p> <p>68 saying, Proph- esy unto us, thou Christ: who is he that struck thee?</p>	<p>Mark 14 and to say unto him, Prophecy: and the officers received him with 'blows</p> <p>of their hands.</p>	<p>Luke 22</p> <p>asked him, saying, Proph- esy: who is he that struck thee?</p> <p>65 And many other things spake they against him, reviling him.</p>
--	--	--

¹Or, sanctuary: as in ch. xxiii, 35; xxvii, 5.
²Or, strokes of rods.

²Gr. liable to.

³Gr. him.

⁴Or, with rods.

160. PETER THRICE DENIES HIS LORD

Court of the high priest's residence. Friday, toward dawn

A. THE FIRST DENIAL

<p>Matt. 26:69-70 69 Now Peter was sitting without in the court: and a maid came unto him,</p>	<p>Mark 14:66-68 66 And as Peter was beneath in the court, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest;</p> <p>67 and see- ing Peter warm- ing himself,</p>	<p>Luke 22:56-57 56 And a certain maid seeing him</p>	<p>John 18:17 17 The maid there- fore that kept the door</p>
--	--	---	--

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26

Mark 14

Luke 22

John 18

as he sat in
the light of the
fire,

she
looked upon him,
and

saith unto
Peter, Art thou
also *one* of this
man's disciples?
He saith, I am
not.

and looking
stedfastly upon
him,

said, This

man also was

with him. 57 But

he denied, saying,

Woman, I know
him not.

ing, say-

Thou also
wast with Jesus

**the Galilæan. 70
But he denied
before them all,**

saying, I know not

what thou sayest.

[*she*] saith,

Thou also wast with
the Nazarene,
even

Jesus. 68 But
he denied,

saying,

'I neither know,
nor understand
what thou sayest :
and he went out
into the ²porch ;
³and the cock
crew.

B. THE SECOND DENIAL

Matt. 26:71-72	Mark 14:69-70a	Luke 22:58	John 18:25b
<p>71 And when he was gone out into the porch,</p> <p>another <i>maid</i> saw him, and saith unto them that were there,</p> <p>This man also was with Jesus of Nazareth.*</p>	<p>69 And</p> <p>the maid saw him, and began again to say to them that stood by,</p> <p>This is <i>one</i> of them.</p> <p>70 But</p> <p>he again denied</p> <p>it.</p>	<p>58 And</p> <p>after a little while</p> <p>another saw him, and said, Thou also art <i>one</i> of them.</p> <p>But Peter</p> <p>said, Man, I am not.</p>	<p>25b They said therefore unto him, Art thou also one of his disciples?</p> <p>He denied,</p> <p>and said, I am not.</p>
<p>72 And again he denied</p> <p>with an oath,</p> <p>I know not the man.</p>			

* It is to be noted that Matthew attributes this statement, not to the maid who first recognized Peter, but to another (cf. Luke 22:58). Such apparent discrepancies are only to be expected when one reflects that the remark of the first maid would naturally result in Peter being recognized and challenged by others also. This, indeed, is clearly indicated by all the Gospel narratives comprising this section.

C. THE THIRD DENIAL

Matt. 26:73-75

73 And after a little while they that stood by came

and
said to Peter,
Of a truth thou
also art one
of them;

for
thy speech mak-
eth thee known.

Mark 14:70b-72

70b And after a little while again they

that stood by

said to Peter,
Of a truth thou
art one of them;

for thou art a
Galilæan.

Luke 22:59-62

59 And after the space of about one hour another

confidently af-
firmed,

saying, Of

a truth this man

also was with him;

for he is a Galilæan.

John 18:25a,26-27

60 But Peter said,
Man, I know not
what thou sayest.

25 Now Simon
Peter was stand-
ing and warming himself. 26 One of the 'servants of the high priest,
being a kinsman of him whose ear Peter cut off, saith, Did not I see thee
in the garden
with him?

27 Pe-

ter therefore denied

again: and straight-

74 Then began he to

curse and to swear,

I know not the man.

And straightway

71 But

he began to curse,
and to swear, I
know not this man
of whom ye speak.

72 And straightway

And immediate-
ly, while he yet
spake,

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 26	Mark 14	Luke 22	John 18
cock crew.	the second time the cock crew.	the cock crew.	way the cock crew.
75 And Peter remembered the word which Jesus had said, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.	And Peter called to mind the word, how that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.	61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how that he said unto him, Before the cock crow this day thou shalt deny me thrice. 62 And he went out, and wept bitterly.	

¹Or, *I neither know, nor understand: thou, what sayest thou?* ²Gr. *forecourt*.
 authorities omit *and the cock crew*. ⁴Gr. *bondservants*. ⁵Or, *And he began to weep*.

³Many ancient

161. AT DAWN JESUS IS AGAIN FORMALLY TRIED BY THE SANHEDRIN

Friday

Matt. 27:1	Mark 15:1a	Luke 22:66-71
I Now when morning was come,	1 And straightway in the morning	66 And as soon as it was day, the assembly of

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 22
all the chief priests and the elders of the people	the chief priests with the elders	the elders of the people was gathered together, both chief priests and scribes;
took counsel a- gainst Jesus to put him to death:	and scribes, and the whole council, held a consult- ation, and [bound Jesus,]	and they led him away into their council, saying,

67 If thou art the Christ, tell us. But he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe: 68 and if I ask you, ye will not answer. 69 But from henceforth shall the Son of man be seated at the right hand of the power of God. 70 And they all said, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, 'Ye say that I am. 71 And they said, What further need have we of witness? for we ourselves have heard from his own mouth.

¹⁰O, Ye say it, because I am.

12. THE REMORSE AND SUICIDE OF JUDAS ISCARIOT

Matt. 27:3-10
 3 Then Judas, who
 betrayed him,
 when he saw that
 he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, 4 saying, I have sinned in that I betrayed innocent blood. But they said, What is that to us? see thou to it. 5 And he cast down the pieces of silver into the sanctuary, and departed;

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27
and he went away
and hanged him-

self. 6 And the chief priests took the pieces of silver, and said, It is not lawful to put them into the ¹treasury, since it is the price of blood. 7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. 8 Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day. 9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken through Jeremiah the prophet, saying, ²And ³they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was priced, ⁴whom *certain* of the children of Israel did price; 10 and ⁵they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

¹Many ancient authorities read *righteous*.
vii. 11. ³Zech. xi. 12, 13. ⁴Or, *I took*.
⁵Some ancient authorities read *I gave*.

²Gr. *corbanas*, that is, *sacred treasury*. Comp. Mk.
³Or, *whom they priced on the part of the sons of Israel*.

163. JESUS BEFORE PILATE THE FIRST TIME

Friday morning, soon after dawn

Matt. 27:2,11-14

Mark 15:1b-5

Luke 23:1-7

John 18:28-38

	[1b the whole council, held a consultation, and]	1 And the whole company of them rose up, and brought him	
2 and they bound him,	bound Jesus, and		23 They lead Jesus
and led him away,	carried him a-		therefore from
and delivered him	way,		Caiaphas into the
up	and delivered		'Prætorium:
to Pilate the	him up		and
governor. 12 And	to Pilate,	fore Pilate. 2 And	
			it was early; and they themselves entered not into the 'Prætorium,

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27

Mark 15

Luke 23

John 18

might eat the passover. 29 Pilate therefore went out unto them, and saith, What accusation bring ye against this man? 30 They answered and said unto him, If this man were not an evil-doer, we should not have delivered him up unto thee.

when he was accused by the chief priests

and elders,

3 And the chief priests

they

accused

began to

accuse

him

him of many things.

saying, We found this man perverting our nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, and saying that he himself is Christ a king.

4 And

he answered nothing. 13 Then saith Pilate unto him,

Pilate again asked him, saying,

Answerest thou nothing?

Hearst thou not how many things they witness against thee?

behold how many things they accuse thee of.

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 18
<p>14 And he gave him no answer, not even to one word: in- somuch that the governor mar- velled greatly.</p>	<p>5 But Jesus no more answered anything; insomuch that Pilate marvelled.</p>		<p>31 Pilate there- fore said unto them, Take him yourselves, and judge him according to your law. The Jews said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: 32 that the word of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying by what manner of death he should die.</p>
<p>11 Now</p> <p>Jesus stood before the governor: and</p> <p>the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews?</p>	<p>2 And</p> <p>Pilate asked him,</p> <p>Art thou the King of the Jews?</p>	<p>3 And Pilate asked him,</p> <p>saying, Art thou the King of the Jews?</p>	<p>33 Pilate there- fore entered a- gain into the 'Prætorium, and called Jesus, and</p> <p>said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews?</p> <p>34 Jesus answer- ed, Sayest thou this of thyself, or</p>
<p>did others tell it thee concerning me? 35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? 36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.</p>			

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27

Mark 15

Luke 23

John 18

And Jesus
said unto him, Thou
sayest.

And he
he answering saith
unto him, Thou
sayest.

And he
answered
him and said,
Thou sayest.

37 Pilate there-
fore said unto
him, Art thou
a king then?
Jesus

answered,
Thou sayest that
I am a king.

To this end have
I been born, and
to this end am I

come into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one
that is of the truth heareth my voice. 38 Pilate saith unto him, What is

truth?

And when he
had said this,
he went out
again unto the
Jews, and

Pilate
4 And
said unto
the chief priests
and the multi-
tudes, I find no
fault in this man.

saith
unto them, I find no
crime in him.

5 But they were

the more urgent, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout
all Judæa, and beginning from Galilee even unto this place. 6 But when
Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man were a Galilæan. 7 And when
he knew that he was of Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him unto Herod, who
himself also was at Jerusalem in these days.

¹Or, palace.

²Or, officers: as in ver. 3, 12, 18, 22.

³Or, Thou sayest it, because I am a king.

164. JESUS BEFORE HEROD ANTIPAS

Jerusalem. Friday, before 6 a. m.

Luke 23:8-12

8	Now when
Herod saw Jesus,	
he was exceeding	

glad : for he was of a long time desirous to see him, because he had heard concerning him ; and he hoped to see some 'miracle done by him. 9 And he questioned him in many words ; but he answered him nothing. 10 And the chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him. 11 And Herod with his soldiers set him at nought, and mocked him, and arraying him in gorgeous apparel sent him back to Pilate. 12 And Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day : for before they were at enmity between themselves.

¹Gr. *sign*.

165. JESUS BEFORE PILATE THE SECOND TIME

Friday, about 6 a. m.

Matt. 27:15-31

Mark 15:6-20

Luke 23:13-25

John 18:39-19:16

13	And Pilate
called together	
the chief priests	

and the rulers and the people, 14 and said unto them, 'Ye brought unto me this man, as one that perverteth the people : and behold, I, having examined him before you, found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him : 15 no, nor yet Herod : for 'he sent him back unto us ; and behold, nothing worthy of death hath been done by him. 16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.² 18 But they cried out all together,

saying,	Away
with this man,	

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27

Mark 15

Luke 23

John 18

15 Now at ³the feast
the governor was
wont to release
unto the multi-
tude one prison-
er, whom they
would. 16 And
they had then a
notable prisoner,
called Barabbas.

6 Now at ³the
feast

he used to
release unto them
one prisoner, whom
they asked of him.

7 And there was
one called Barabbas,

lying bound with
them that had
made insurrec-
tion,

men

and release unto us
Barabbas:— 19 one

who for a certain
insurrection made

in the city,
and

39 But [said Pi-
late] ye have a
custom, that I
should release
unto you one
at the passover:
will ye therefore
that I release
unto you the
King of the
Jews?

40 They
cried out there-
fore again, say-
ing, Not this
man, but Bar-
abbas. Now Bar-
abbas was a
robber.

Matt. 27

Mark 15
who

Luke 23

for murder,

in
the insurrection

was cast into
prison.

19 And while he was sitting on the judgment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righteous man; for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

17 When therefore they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them,

Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus who is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for

had committed murder. 8 And the multitude went up and began to ask him *to do* as he was wont to do unto them.

9 And Pilate answered them,

saying,

Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews? 10 For he perceived that for

20 And Pilate spake unto them again, desiring to release Jesus;

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23
<p>envy they had delivered him up. 20 Now the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitudes that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.</p>	<p>envy the chief priests had delivered him up. 11 But the chief priests stirred up the multitude, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.</p>	
<p>21 But the governor answered and said unto them, Which of the two will ye that I release unto you? And they said, Barabbas. 22 Pilate saith unto them, What then shall I do unto Jesus who is called Christ?</p>	<p>12 And Pilate again answered and said unto them, What then shall I do unto</p>	
<p>They all say, Let him be crucified.</p>	<p>him whom ye call the King of the Jews? 13 And they cried out again, Crucify him.</p>	<p>21 but they shouted, saying, Crucify, crucify him.</p>

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>23 And he said, Why, what evil hath he done?</p>	<p>14 And Pilate said unto them, Why what evil hath he done?</p>	<p>22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath this man done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him and release him.</p>	
<p>But they cried out exceedingly,</p>	<p>But they cried out exceedingly,</p>	<p>23 But they were urgent with loud voices,</p>	
<p>saying, Let him be crucified. 24 So when Pilate saw that he prevailed</p>	<p>Crucify him.</p>	<p>asking that he might be crucified.</p>	
<p>nothing, but rather that a tumult was arising, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this righteous man; see ye to it. 25 And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.</p>			
<p>27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the</p>	<p>16 And the soldiers led him away within the court, which is</p>		<p>1 Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.</p>

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15		John 19
<p>⁵Prætorium, and gathered unto him the whole ⁶band. 28 And they ⁷stripped him, and</p>	<p>the ⁵Prætorium; and they call to- gether the whole ⁶band. 17 And they</p>		
<p>put on him a scarlet robe. 29 And they platted a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand;</p>	<p>clothed* him with purple, and</p>	<p>plating a crown of thorns, they put it on him;</p>	<p>2 And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple garment;</p>
<p>30 And they spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head.</p>	<p>19 And they smote his head with a reed, and spat upon him,</p>		<p>3 and they came unto him, and</p>
<p>29b And they kneeled down before him,</p>	<p>and bowing their knees worship- ped him. 18 And they began to salute him,</p>		
<p>and mock- ed him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!</p>	<p>Hail, King of the Jews!</p>		<p>said, Hail, King of the Jews!</p>
			<p>and they struck him *with</p>

* The standard text reads "clothe". The past tense is used here to improve the construction of the connected narrative.

Luke 23

John 19
their hands. 4
And Pilate went

out again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him out to you, that ye may know that I find no crime in him. 5 Jesus therefore came out, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple garment. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold, the man! 6 When therefore the chief priests and the officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*! Pilate saith unto them, Take him yourselves, and crucify him: for I find no crime in him. 7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by that law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God. 8 When Pilate therefore heard this saying, he was the more afraid; 9 and he entered into the 'Prætorium again, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. 10 Pilate therefore saith unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have 'power to release thee, and have 'power to crucify thee? 11 Jesus answered him, Thou wouldest have no 'power against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath greater sin. 12 Upon this Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou release this man, thou art not Cæsar's friend: every one that maketh himself a king 'speaketh against Cæsar. 13 When Pilate therefore heard these words, he brought Jesus out, and sat down on the judgment-seat at a place called The Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14 Now it was the Preparation of the passover: it was about the sixth hour.* And he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your King! 15 They therefore cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him! Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered,

We have no
king but Cæsar.And
their voices pre-
vailed.

* John, who wrote in Asia Minor long after the destruction of Jerusalem, apparently uses Græco-Roman time throughout his Gospel, thus beginning the day at midnight. The other Gospel writers use Jewish time, according to which the crucifixion took place at the third hour, or 9 a. m. (cf. Mark 15:25).

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23 24 And Pilate	John 19
26 Then released he unto them Barabbas;	15 And Pilate, wishing to content the multitude,	gave sentence that what they asked for should be done. 25 And he released	
	released unto them Barabbas,	him that for insurrection and murder had been cast into prison, whom they asked for; but Jesus he delivered up to their will.	
but Jesus he scourged and delivered to be crucified. 31 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him	and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.		15 Then therefore he delivered him
	20 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the purple, and		unto them to be crucified.
the robe, and put on him his garments, and led him away to crucify him.	put on him his garments. And they lead him out to crucify him.		

¹Many ancient authorities read *I sent you to him, he must needs release unto them at the feast one prisoner.* Comp. Mt. xxvii. 15; Mk. xv. 6; Jn. xviii. 39. Others add the same words after ver. 19. ²Many ancient authorities insert ver. 17 *Now ye &c.* ³Or, *a feast.* ⁴Some ancient authorities read *of this blood: see authority.* ⁵Or, *palace.* ⁶Or, *cohort.* ⁷Some ancient authorities read *clothed.* ⁸Or, *with rods.* ⁹Or, *Or, opposeth Caesar.*

166. JESUS ON THE WAY TO CALVARY

Friday, about 8 a. m.

Matt. 27:32	Mark 15:21	Luke 23:26-32	John 19:17a
	21 And		17 They took Jesus therefore : and he went out, bearing the cross for himself,
32 And as they		26 And when	
	they		
came		they	
out, they found	one	led him away, they	
a man of Cyrene,		laid hold upon one Si-	
	passing by,	mon of Cyrene, com-	
Simon by name :	Simon of Cyrene,	ing from the country,	
	coming from the		
	country, the		
	father of Alex-		
	ander and Rufus,		
him they ² com-			
pelled	to go with them,		
	that he might bear	and laid on him	
to go with	his cross.	the cross, to bear	
them, that he might		it after Jesus.	
bear his cross.		27 And there	
		followed him a	
great multitude of the people, and of women who bewailed and lamented him. 28 But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. 29 For behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the breasts that never gave suck. 30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover			

THE PASSION WEEK

Luke 23
us. 31 For if they
do these things

in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

32 And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

¹Gr. *impress.* ²Gr. *impressed.*

167. THE CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

Friday, from 9 a. m. to 3 p. m.

Matt. 27:33-56

33 And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, The place of a skull, 34 they gave him wine

to
drink mingled
with gall: and

when he had
tasted it, he
would not drink.

38 Then are there
crucified with him

Mark 15:22-41

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. 23 And

they
offered him wine

mingled with

myrrh: but

he
received it not.

25 And it was the
third hour, and

they crucified him.

27 And

with him

they crucify

Luke 23:33-49

33 And when they
came unto the

place which is
called 'The skull,

John 19:17b-37

[17b bearing the cross
for himself,] unto the

place called The
place of a skull,
which is called
in Hebrew Golgo-
tha:

there they cru-
cified him, and

the malefactors,

18 where they
crucified him, and
with him

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
two robbers, one on the right hand and one on the left.	two robbers; one on his right hand, and one on his left.	one on the right hand and the other on the left.	two others, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.
	26 And	34 ² And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.	
		38 And there was also	19 And Pi- late wrote a title also,
37 And they set	the superscription of his accusation	a superscription	
up over his head			and put it
his accusation writ- ten, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.	was written over,	over him, This is	on the cross. And there was written,
	THE KING OF THE JEWS.	THE KING OF THE JEWS.	Jesus of Nazareth, the King of the Jews. 20 This title therefore read many of the Jews,
'for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city; and it was written in Hebrew, and in Latin, and in Greek. 21 The chief priests of the Jews therefore said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but, that he said, I am King of the Jews. 22 Pilate answered, What I have written I			
			have written.
			23 The soldiers therefore, when

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>35 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments among them,</p>	<p>24 And they crucify him, and part his garments among them,</p>	<p>34^b And parting his garments among them,</p>	<p>they had crucified Jesus, took his garments and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also the 'coat: now the 'coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.</p>
<p>casting lots;</p>	<p>casting lots upon them, what each should take.</p>	<p>cast lots,</p>	<p>24 They said therefore one to another, Let us not rend it, but</p>
<p>36 and</p>		<p>they</p>	<p>cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith,</p>
<p>they sat and watched him there. 39 And</p>		<p>35 And</p>	<p>They parted my garments among them, And upon my vesture did they cast lots [Ps. 22:18].</p>
		<p>the people stood beholding.</p>	<p>25 These things therefore the soldiers did.</p>

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23
<p>they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, 40 and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple,</p>	<p>29 And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ha! thou that destroyest the temple,</p>	<p>And</p>
<p>and buildest it in three days, save thyself: if thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross.</p>	<p>and buildest it in three days, 30 save thyself, and come down from the cross.</p>	<p>the rulers also scoffed at him, saying,</p>
<p>41 In like manner also the chief priests mocking <i>him</i>, with the scribes</p>	<p>31 In like manner also the chief priests mocking <i>him</i> among themselves with the scribes</p>	
<p>and elders, said,</p>	<p>said,</p>	
<p>⁴²He saved others; <i>him-</i> self he cannot save.</p>	<p>He saved others ; 'himself he can- not save. 32 Let</p>	<p>He saved others ; let</p>
<p>He is the King of Israel; let him now come down from the cross, and we will</p>	<p>the Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross, that we may see and</p>	<p>him save him- self, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen.</p>

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>believe on him. 43 He trusteth on God; let him deliver him now, if he desireth him: for he said, I am the Son of God.</p>	<p>believe.</p>		
<p>44 And the robbers also that were cruci- fied with him cast upon him the same reproach.</p>	<p>And they that were cruci- fied with him reproached him.</p>	<p>36 And the sol- diers also mocked him, coming to him, offering him vinegar, 37 and saying, If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself. 39 And one of the malefactors that were hanged railed on him, saying, Art not thou the Christ? save thyself and</p>	<p>But there were stand- ing by the cross of Jesus his</p>
<p>us. 40 But the other answered, and rebuking him said, Dost thou not even fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? 41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. 42 And he said, Jesus, remember me when thou comest 'in thy kingdom. 43 And he said unto him, Verily I say unto thee,</p>		<p>To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.</p>	

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
			mother, and his mother's sister,
Mary the <i>wife</i> of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. 26 When Jesus there- fore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold, thy son! 27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold, thy mother! And from that hour the disciple			
			took her unto his own <i>home</i> .
45 Now from the sixth hour there was dark- ness over all the ^o land until the ninth hour.	33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole ^o land until the ninth hour.	44 And it was now about the sixth hour, and a darkness came over the whole ^o land until the ninth hour, 45 ^o the sun's light failing :	
46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, ^o Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is, My God, my God, "why hast thou forsaken me? 47 And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elijah.	34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, ^o My God, my God, "why hast thou forsaken me? 35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elijah.		28 After this Je- sus, knowing that all things are now finished, "that the scripture might

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>48 And</p> <p>straight- way one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed,</p> <p>and gave him</p> <p>to drink. 49 And the rest said, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to save him.¹³</p> <p>50 And Jesus cried again with a loud voice,</p>	<p>36 And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed,</p> <p>and gave him</p> <p>to drink, saying, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to take him down.</p> <p>37 And Jesus uttered a loud voice,</p>	<p>46 ¹⁴And when Jesus had</p> <p>cried with a loud voice,</p> <p>he said,* Father, into thy hands</p>	<p>be accomplished, saith, I thirst. 29 There was set there a vessel full of vinegar: so</p> <p>they put a sponge full of the vinegar</p> <p>upon hyssop, and brought it to his mouth.</p> <p>30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he</p> <p>said, It is finished: and</p>

* The reading given in the footnotes of the standard text is substituted here for that of the text itself, which appears in the footnotes at the end of this section.

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>and yielded up his spirit.</p>	<p>and gave up the ghost.</p>	<p>I commend my spirit: and having said this, he gave up the ghost.</p>	<p>he bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.</p>
<p>51 And behold, the veil of the ⁵temple was rent in two from the top to the bottom; and the earth did</p>	<p>38 And the veil of the ⁵temple was rent in two from the top to the bottom.</p>	<p>45^b and the veil of the ⁵temple was rent in the midst.</p>	
<p>quake; and the rocks were rent; 52 and the tombs were opened; and many bodies of the saints that had fallen asleep were raised; 53 and coming forth out of the tombs after his resurrection they entered into the holy city and appeared unto many. 54 Now the centurion,</p>	<p>39 And when the centurion,</p>		
<p>and they that were with him watching Jesus,</p>	<p>who stood by over against him,</p>		
<p>when they saw the earthquake, and the things that were done, feared exceedingly, and</p>	<p>saw that he ¹⁵so gave up the ghost,</p>	<p>47 And when the centurion saw what was done, he</p>	

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23
said,*	he said,	glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a right- eous man.
Truly this was ¹⁶ the Son of God.	Truly this man was ¹⁶the Son of God.	
55 And	40 And there were also women	48 And all the multi- tudes that came together to this sight, when they beheld the things that were done, returned smiting their breasts. 49 And all his ac- quaintance, and the women
many wo- men were there	beholding from afar: among whom were both Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of ¹⁷James the ¹⁸less and of Josés, and Salomé;	
the mother of the sons of Zebedee.	41 who, when he was in Galilee,	that followed with him from Galilee,

* The standard text reads "saying". This slight alteration improves the grammatical construction of the composite narrative.

Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>followed him, and ministered unto him; and many other wo- men that came up with him unto Jerusalem.</p>	<p>stood afar off, seeing these things.</p>	<p>31 The Jews there- fore, because it</p>

was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remain on the cross upon the sabbath (for the day of that sabbath was a high day), asked of Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away. 32 The soldiers therefore came, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other that was crucified with him: 33 but when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: 34 howbeit one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and straightway there came out blood and water. 35 And he that hath seen hath borne witness, and his witness is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye also may believe. 36 For these things came to pass, that the scripture might be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be ¹⁹broken [Ex. 12:46; Num. 9:12; Ps. 34:20]. 37 And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced [Zech. 12:10].

¹Many ancient authorities insert *ver. 28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was reckoned with transgressors.* See Lk. 22. 37. ²Some ancient authorities omit *And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.* ³Or, *for the place of the city where Jesus was crucified was nigh at hand.* ⁴Or, *tunic.* ⁵Or, *sanctuary.* ⁶Or, *can he not save himself?* ⁷Some ancient authorities read *into thy kingdom.* ⁸Or, *earth.* ⁹Gr. *the sun failing.* ¹⁰Ps. xxii. 1. ¹¹Or, *why didst thou forsake me?* ¹²Ps. lxix. 21. ¹³Many ancient authorities add *And another took a spear and pierced his side, and there came out water and blood.* See Jn. xix. 34. ¹⁴Or, *And Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said.* ¹⁵Many ancient authorities read *so cried out, and gave up the ghost.* ¹⁶Or, *a son of God.* ¹⁷Or, *Jacob.* ¹⁸Gr. *little.* ¹⁹Or, *crushed.*

168. THE BURIAL OF JESUS

Friday evening, before 6 o'clock

Matt. 27:57-61	Mark 15:42-47	Luke 23:50-56a	John 19:38-42
57 And when even was come,	42 And when even was now come, because it was the Preparation, that is, the day before the sab- bath,		
there came a rich man		50 And behold, a man	
from Arimathæa,	43 there came Joseph of Arima- thæa, a councillor	named Joseph, who was a coun- cillor,	38 And after these things Joseph of Arimathæa,
	of honorable estate,	a good and righteous man 51 (he had not consented to their counsel and deed), a man of Arimathæa, a city of the Jews, who	
named Joseph, who			
also himself was			
Jesus' disciple; 58			
this man	who also himself was looking for the kingdom of God; and he	was looking for the kingdom of God: 52 this man	being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews,

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.</p>	<p>boldly went in unto Pilate,</p> <p>and asked for the body of Jesus.</p>	<p>went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.</p>	<p>asked of Pilate</p> <p>that he might take away</p> <p>the body of Jesus :</p>
<p>Then</p>	<p>44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead : and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he 'had been any while dead.</p>		
<p>Pilate commanded</p>	<p>45 And when he learned it of the centurion,</p>		
<p>it to be given up.</p>	<p>he granted the corpse to Joseph.</p>		<p>and Pilate gave <i>him</i> leave. He</p>
<p>59 And Joseph</p>	<p>46 And he bought a linen cloth, and</p>	<p>53 And</p>	<p>came therefore, and</p>
<p>took the body,</p>	<p>taking him down</p>	<p>he took it down,</p>	<p>took away his body. 39 And</p>

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,</p>	<p>wound him in the linen cloth,</p>	<p>and wrap- ped it in a linen cloth,</p>	<p>there came also Nicodemus, he who at the first came to him by night, bringing a 'mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hun- dred pounds. 40 So they took the body of Je- sus, and bound it</p>
<p>60 and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock:</p>	<p>and laid him in a tomb which had been hewn out of a rock;</p>	<p>and laid him in a tomb that was hewn in stone, where never man had yet lain.</p>	<p>in linen cloths with the spices, as the custom of the Jews is to bury. 41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a gar- den; and in the garden a new tomb* wherein was never man yet laid.</p>

* Note the additional information given by Matthew (27:60) to the effect that it was Joseph's "own new tomb which he had hewn". In order to avoid ambiguity, this had to be omitted from the composite narrative.

THE PASSION WEEK

Matt. 27	Mark 15	Luke 23	John 19
<p>he rolled a</p> <p>and</p> <p>great</p> <p>stone to the door of the tomb, and departed.</p> <p>61 And Mary Magdalene was there,</p> <p>and the other</p> <p>Mary,</p> <p>sitting over against the sepulchre.</p>	<p>and</p> <p>he rolled a</p> <p>stone against the door of the tomb.</p> <p>47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses</p> <p>beheld where he was laid.</p>	<p>54 And</p> <p>it was the day of the Preparation,</p> <p>and the sabbath³ drew on. 55 And</p> <p>the</p> <p>women, who had come with him out of Galilee, followed after, and</p> <p>beheld the tomb, and how his body was laid. 56 And they returned,</p>	<p>42 There then because</p> <p>of the Jews' Preparation (for the tomb was nigh at hand) they laid Jesus.</p>

¹Many ancient authorities read *were already dead.*
began to dawn.

²Some ancient authorities read *roll.*

³ Gr.

169. ON THE SABBATH DAY THE WOMEN REST, WHILE
THE SANHEDRIN, WITH PILATE'S PERMISSION, SEAL
THE TOMB AND PLACE A GUARD THERE

Matt. 27:62-66

62 Now on the
morrow, which is

the day

after the
Preparation,

the
chief priests and
the Pharisees
were gathered to-

Luke 23:56c

56c And on

the sab-

bath

they rested
according to the
commandment.

24:1 But...

gether unto Pilate, 63 saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said while he was yet alive, After three days I rise again. 64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest haply his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead : and the last error will be worse than the first. 65 Pilate said unto them, 'Ye have a guard : go, 'make it as sure as ye can. 66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, the guard being with them.

¹Or, Take a guard. ²Gr. make it sure, as ye know.

170. AT THE CLOSE OF THE SABBATH THE WOMEN PREPARE SPICES TO ANOINT THE BODY OF JESUS

Saturday, after 6 p. m.

Mark 16:1

Luke 23:56b

1 And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *m o t h e r* of 'James, and Salome, bought

56 [And they returned,]

spices,

and prepared spices and ointments.

that they might come and anoint him.

¹Or, *Jacob*.

PART XI

THE RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES AND ASCENSION OF JESUS

FORTY DAYS — PROBABLY APRIL 9TH TO MAY 18TH, A. D. 30

171. THE EARTHQUAKE, THE ROLLING AWAY OF THE STONE, AND THE TERROR OF THE GUARD

Sunday, before dawn

Matt. 28:2-4

2 And behold,
there was a great
earthquake; for

an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and sat upon it. 3 His appearance was as lightning, and his raiment white as snow: 4 and for fear of him the watchers did quake, and became as dead men.

172. COMING WITH THE OTHER WOMEN EARLY SUNDAY MORNING, MARY MAGDALENE SEES THE EMPTY TOMB AND HASTENS AWAY TO PETER AND JOHN, REPORTING A GRAVE ROBBERY

Matt. 28:1	Mark 16:2-5a	Luke 24:1-3	John 20:1-2
1 Now late on the sabbath day, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.	2 And very early on the first day of the week, they come to the tomb when the sun was risen.	1 But on the first day of the week,	1 Now on the first day of the week
		at early dawn, they came unto the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared.	cometh Mary Magdalene early, while it was yet dark, unto the tomb,
	3 And they were saying among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the tomb?		
	4 and looking up, they see that the stone is rolled back: for it was exceeding great.	2 And they found the stone rolled away from the tomb.	and seeth the stone taken away from the tomb.
	5 And entering into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting ...	3 And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.	
			2 She [Mary Magdalene] runneth there-

John 20
fore, and cometh
to Simon Peter,

and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we know not where they have laid him.

173. THE OTHER WOMEN REMAIN AT THE TOMB, RECEIVE FROM THE ANGELS THE MESSAGE OF THE RESURRECTION, AND DEPART IN JOYOUS HASTE

Early Sunday morning

Matt. 28:5-8

Mark 16:5b-8

Luke 24:4-9a

5b[they saw a young man sitting] on the right side, arrayed in a white robe;

and they were amazed. 6 And

5 And the angel answered and said

unto the women,
Fear not ye;

he saith unto them,

4 And it came to pass, while they were perplexed thereabout, behold, two men* stood by them in dazzling apparel:

5 and

as they were affrighted and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said

unto them,

* Matthew and Mark mention only one angel.

Matt. 28	Mark 16	Luke 24
<p>for I know that ye seek Jesus,</p> <p>who hath been crucified.</p> <p>6 He is not here; for he is risen, even as he said.</p>	<p>Be not amazed: ye seek Jesus, the Nazarene,</p> <p>who hath been crucified: he is risen; he is not here:</p>	<p>Why seek ye ²the living among the dead? 6 ³He is not here, but is risen: remember</p>
<p>Come, see the place 'where the Lord lay. 7 And go quickly, and</p> <p>tell his disciples,</p> <p>He is risen from the dead; and lo, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him:</p> <p>lo, I have told you.</p>	<p>behold, the place where they laid him! 7 But go,</p> <p>tell his disciples and Peter,</p> <p>He goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him,</p> <p>as he said unto you.</p> <p>8 And</p>	<p>fied, and the third day rise again.</p> <p>8 And they re- membered his words, 9 and</p>

Matt. 28	Mark 16	Luke 24
8 And they departed quickly from the tomb with fear and great joy, and ran to bring his disciples word.	they went out, and fled from the tomb ; for trembling and astonishment had come upon them : and they said nothing to any one ; for they were afraid.	returned ⁵ from the tomb,

¹Some ancient authorities omit *of the Lord Jesus*. ²Gr. *him that liveth*. ³Some ancient authorities omit *He is not here, but is risen*. ⁴Many ancient authorities read *where he lay*. ⁵Some ancient authorities omit *from the tomb*.

174. PETER AND JOHN (LEAVING MARY MAGDALENE TO FOLLOW) RUN TO THE TOMB TO VERIFY HER REPORT, AND DEPART CONVINCED

Sunday morning

	Luke 24:12	John 20:3-10
	12 'But Peter arose and ran unto the tomb ;	3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and they went toward the tomb. 4 And they ran both together :
and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the tomb ; 5 and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths lying ; yet entered he not in. 6 Simon Peter therefore also cometh, following him, and entered into the tomb ; and he beholdeth the		

		<p>Luke 24</p> <p>and stooping</p> <p>and looking in,</p> <p>he seeth the linen</p> <p>cloths by them</p> <p>selves; and</p>	<p>John 20</p> <p>linen cloths lying,</p> <p>7 and the napkin,</p> <p>that was upon his</p> <p>head, not lying</p> <p>with the linen</p> <p>cloths, but rolled</p> <p>up in a place by</p> <p>itself. 8 Then en-</p> <p>tered in therefore</p>
the other disciple also, who came first to the tomb, and he saw, and be-			
lieved. 9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again			
		<p>he ²de-</p> <p>parted to his</p> <p>home,</p> <p>wondering at that</p> <p>which was come</p> <p>to pass.</p>	<p>from the dead.</p> <p>10 So the disci-</p> <p>ples went away</p> <p>again unto their</p> <p>own</p> <p>home.</p>

¹Some ancient authorities omit ver. 12.

²Or, *departed, wondering with himself.*

175. JESUS APPEARS TO MARY MAGDALENE AT THE TOMB

Sunday morning

Mark 16:9

9 ¹Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven demons.

John 20:11-17

11 But Mary was standing without at the tomb weeping: so, as she wept, she stooped and looked into

John 20
the tomb; 12 and
she beholdeth two

angels in white sitting, one at the head, and one at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. 13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. 14 When she had thus said, she turned herself back, and beholdeth Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. 15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turneth herself, and saith unto him in Hebrew, Rabboni; which is to say, Teacher. 17 Jesus saith to her, 'Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto the Father: but go unto my brethren, and say to them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and my God and your God.

¹The two oldest Greek manuscripts, and some other authorities, omit from ver. 9 to the end. Some other authorities have a different ending to the Gospel. ²Or, *Take not hold on me.*

176. WHILE THE OTHER WOMEN ARE ON THEIR WAY TO THE DISCIPLES WITH THE NEWS OF HIS RESURRECTION, JESUS APPEARS TO THEM ALSO

Sunday morning

Matt. 28:9-10

9 And behold,
Jesus met them,
saying, All hail.

And they came and took hold of his feet, and worshipped him. 10 Then saith Jesus unto them, Fear not: go tell my brethren that they depart into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

177. THE WOMEN ALL REPORT TO THE DISBELIEVING DISCIPLES THAT JESUS HAS APPEARED TO THEM

Sunday morning

Mark 16:10-11

Luke 24:9b-11

John 20:18

10 She went and told them that had been with him,

as
they mourned
and wept.

11 And they, when they heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, disbelieved.

9b and [they] told all these things to the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 Now they were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James: and the other women with them told these things unto the apostles. 11 And these words appeared in their sight as idle talk; and they disbelieved them.

18 [Then] Mary Magdalene cometh and telleth the disciples,

I have seen the Lord; and that he had said these things unto her.

**178. SOME OF THE GUARD REPORT TO THE SANHEDRIN,
WHO BRIBE THEM TO SPREAD A FALSE STORY**

Sunday morning

Matt. 28:11-15

11 Now while they
were going, be-
hold, some of the

guard came into the city, and told unto the chief priests all the things that were come to pass. 12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave much money unto the soldiers, 13 saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14 And if this 'come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and rid you of care. 15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying was spread abroad among the Jews, *and continueth* until this day.

¹Or, *come to a hearing before the governor.*

**179. JESUS APPEARS TO CLEOPAS AND HIS COMPANION
ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS**

Sunday afternoon

Mark 16:12

12 And after these things he was manifested in another form unto two of them, as they walked, on their way into the country.

Luke 24:13-32

13 And behold, two of them were going that very day to a village named Emmaus, which was three-score furlongs from Jerusalem. 14 And they communed with each

Luke 24
other of all these
things which had

happened. 15 And it came to pass, while they communed and questioned together, that Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. 16 But their eyes were holden that they should not know him. 17 And he said unto them, 'What communications are these that ye have one with another, as ye walk? And they stood still, looking sad. 18 And one of them, named Cleopas, answering said unto him, 'Dost thou alone sojourn in Jerusalem and not know the things which are come to pass there in these days? 19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, The things concerning Jesus the Nazarene, who was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: 20 and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death, and crucified him. 21 But we hoped that it was he who should redeem Israel. Yea and besides all this, it is now the third day since these things came to pass. 22 Moreover certain women of our company amazed us, having been early at the tomb; 23 and when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, who said that he was alive. 24 And certain of them that were with us went to the tomb, and found it even so as the women had said: but him they saw not. 25 And he said unto them, O foolish men, and slow of heart to believe ¹in all that the prophets have spoken! 26 Behooved it not the Christ to suffer these things, and to enter into his glory? 27 And beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he interpreted to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. 28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they were going: and he made as though he would go further. 29 And they constrained him, saying, Abide with us; for it is toward evening, and the day is now far spent. And he went in to abide with them. 30 And it came to pass, when he had sat down with them to meat, he took the 'bread and blessed; and breaking *it* he gave to them. 31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. 32 And they said one to another, Was not our heart burning within us, while he spake to us in the way, while he opened to us the scriptures?

¹Gr. *What words are these that ye exchange one with another.*
salem, and knowest not the things. ³Or, *after.* ⁴Or, *loaf.*

²Or, *Dost thou sojourn alone in Jeru-*

**180. RETURNING TO JERUSALEM TO REPORT TO THE DISCIPLES,
CLEOPAS AND HIS COMPANION ARE INFORMED THAT
CHRIST HAS APPEARED TO PETER**

Sunday evening

Mark 16:13	Luke 24:33-35	John 20:19a
	33 And	19 When therefore
		it was evening, on
		that day, the first
		day of the week,
		and
	they rose	
	up that very hour,	
	and returned to	
	Jerusalem, and	
	found the eleven*	
	gathered togeth-	
	er, and them that	
	were with them,	
	34 saying, The	
	Lord is risen	
	indeed, and hath	
	appeared to Si-	
	mon. 35 And	
13 And they went away		
		when the
		doors were shut
		where the dis-
		ciples were, for
		fear of the
		Jews,

* To be exact, there were only ten of the apostles present, for John states (20:24) that Thomas was absent on this occasion. The expression "the eleven" was probably used after the death of Judas with reference to the apostles as a group, even though all the members of the group might not always be present.

	Mark 16	Luke 24	John 20
	and told it unto the rest: neither believed they them.	they rehearsed the things <i>that hap-</i> <i>pened</i> in the way, and how he was known of them in the breaking of the bread.	[Jesus came]

**181. JESUS APPEARS TO THE DISCIPLES, WHILE THOMAS
IS ABSENT, AND GIVES THEM A COMMISSION — THEY
FAIL TO CONVINCE THOMAS**

Jerusalem, Sunday evening

Mark 16:14	Luke 24:36-43	John 20:19b-25
14 And afterward he was manifested unto the eleven themselves as they sat at meat;	36 And as they spake these things, he him- self stood in the midst of them, 'and saith unto them, Peace <i>be</i> unto you. 37 But they were terri- fied and affright-	19b Jesus came and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace <i>be</i> unto you.

ed, and supposed that they beheld a spirit. 38 And he said unto them,
Why are ye troubled? and wherefore do questionings arise in your heart?

Mark 16	Luke 24	John 20
<p>and</p> <p>he upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them that had seen him after he was risen.</p>	<p>39 See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye behold me having.</p> <p>40² And</p> <p>when he had said this, he showed them his hands</p> <p>and his feet.</p> <p>41 And while they still disbelieved for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here anything to eat? 42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish'. 43 And he took it, and ate before them.</p>	<p>20 And when he had said this, he showed unto them his hands and his side.</p>

John 20

The disciples
therefore were

glad, when they saw the Lord. 21 Jesus therefore said to them again, Peace *be* unto you : as the Father hath sent me, even so send I you. 22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Spirit : 23 whose soever sins ye forgive, they are forgiven unto them ; whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called 'Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. 25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.

¹Some ancient authorities omit *and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.* ²Some ancient authorities omit ver. 40. ³Many ancient authorities add *and a honeycomb.* ⁴That is, *Twin.*

182. JESUS APPEARS TO THE DISCIPLES AGAIN A WEEK LATER, AND THOMAS IS CONVINCED

Jerusalem

John 20:26-30

26 And after eight
days again his
disciples were

within, and Thomas with them. Jesus cometh, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you. 27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and see my hands ; and reach *hither* thy hand, and put it into my side : and be not faithless, but believing. 28 Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. 29 Jesus saith unto him, Because thou hast seen me, 'thou hast believed : blessed *are* they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

30 Many other signs therefore did Jesus in the presence of the disciples, which are not written in this book :

¹Or, *hast thou believed ?*

183. JESUS APPEARS TO SEVEN OF THE DISCIPLES AT THE SEA OF GALILEE — THE MIRACULOUS CATCH OF FISHES AND PETER'S TEST

John 21:1-23

1 After these things Jesus manifested him-

self again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and he manifested *himself* on this wise. 2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called 'Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also come with thee. They went forth, and entered into the boat; and that night they took nothing. 4 But when day was now breaking, Jesus stood on the beach: yet the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. 5 Jesus therefore saith unto them, Children, have ye aught to eat? They answered him, No. 6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. 7 That disciple therefore whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. So when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his coat about him (for he 'was naked), and cast himself into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits off), dragging the net *full* of fishes. 9 So when they got out upon the land, they see 'a fire of coals there, and 'fish laid thereon, and 'bread. 10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now taken. 11 Simon Peter therefore went 'up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, the net was not rent. 12 Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* break your fast. And none of the disciples durst inquire of him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. 13 Jesus cometh, and taketh the 'bread, and giveth them, and the fish likewise. 14 This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 So when they had broken their fast, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,

John 21

Simon, son of

⁹John, ¹⁰lovest thou

me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I ¹¹love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. 16 He saith to him again a second time, Simon, son of ¹²John, ¹³lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I ¹⁴love thee. He saith unto him, Tend my sheep. 17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of ¹⁵John, ¹⁶lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, ¹⁷Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou ¹⁸knowest that I ¹⁹love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. 18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. 19 Now this he spake, signifying by what manner of death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. 20 Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; who also leaned back on his breast at the supper, and said, Lord, who is he that ²¹betrayeth thee? 21 Peter therefore seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, ²²and what shall this man do? 22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me. 23 This saying therefore went forth among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, that he should not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

¹That is, *Twin*.

²Or, *had on his undergarment only*. Comp. ch. xiii. 4; Is. xx. 2; Mic. i. 8, 11.

³Gr. *a fire of charcoal*.

⁴Or, *a fish*.

⁵Or, *a loaf*.

⁶Or, *aboard*.

⁷Or, *loaf*.

⁸Gr. *Joannes*. See

ch. i. 42, margin.

⁹ ¹⁰Love in these places represents two different Greek word s.

¹¹Or, *perceivest*.

¹²Or, *delivereth thee up*.

¹³Gr. *and this man, what?*

184. JESUS APPEARS TO THE ELEVEN DISCIPLES ON AN APPOINTED MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE — THE GREAT COMMISSION

Matt. 28:16-20

Mark 16:15-18

Luke 24:44-49

16 But the eleven
disciples went

Matt. 28	Mark 16	Luke 24
<p>into Galilee, unto the mountain where Jesus had appointed them. 17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him; but some doubted. 18 And Jesus came to them and spake unto them, saying,</p>	<p>15 And he said unto them,</p>	<p>44 And he said unto them,</p> <p>These are my words which I spake unto you,</p>

while I was yet with you, that all things must needs be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me. 45 Then opened he their mind, that they might understand the scriptures; 46 and he said unto them, Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day; 47 and that repentance

and remission of sins should be preached in his name unto all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem.

All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth.

19 Go ye

therefore,

Go ye

into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation.

48 Ye are witnesses of these things.

Matt. 28	Mark 16	Luke 24
and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit: 20 teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you: and lo, I am with you 'always, even unto 'the end of the world.		
	16 He that believeth and is	
	baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. 17 And these signs shall accompany them that believe: in my name shall they cast out demons; they shall speak with 'new tongues; 18 they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise	
	hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.	
		49 And behold, I send forth the
		promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city, until ye be clothed with power from on high."

¹Some ancient authorities read unto. ²Or, nations. Beginning from Jerusalem, ye are witnesses.
³Gr. all the days. ⁴Or, the consummation of the age. ⁵Some ancient authorities omit new.

185. THE ASCENSION OF JESUS

The Mount of Olives

Mark 16:19-20	Luke 24:50-53
19 So then the Lord Jesus,	50 And he

* Other appearances of Jesus, not recorded in the Gospels, are mentioned in 1 Cor. 15:6-7.

THE RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES AND ASCENSION OF JESUS

Mark 16	Luke 24
<p>after he had spoken unto them,</p>	<p>led them out until <i>they</i> <i>were</i> over a- gainst Bethany: and</p>
<p>received was up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God.</p>	<p>he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. 51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he parted from them, 'and was carried</p>
<p>20 And they went forth, and preach-</p>	<p>up into heaven.</p> <p>52 And they ²worshipped him, and return- ed to Jerusalem with great joy: 53 and were con- tinually in the temple, blessing God.*</p>

* A fuller account of the ascension appears in Acts 1:6-12.

Mark 16

ed everywhere,
the Lord working
with them, and
confirming the
word by the signs
that followed.
Amen.

¹Some ancient authorities omit *and was carried up into heaven.*
worshipped him, and. See marginal note on ch. iv. 7.

²Some ancient authorities omit

PART XII

CONCLUSION

186. THE PURPOSE OF JOHN'S GOSPEL, AND THE PERSONAL TESTIMONY OF THE AUTHOR

John 1:14^b, 16-18;
20:31; 21:24-25

21:25 And there
are also many
other things

which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself would not contain the books that should be written. 20:31 But these are written, that ye may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye may have life in his name. 1:16 For of his fulness we all received, and 'grace for grace. 14^b (and we beheld his glory, glory as of 'the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth. 17 For the law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ. 18 No man hath seen God at any time; 'the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

21:24 This is the disciple that beareth witness of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his witness is true.

¹Or, *grace upon grace*. ²Or, *an only begotten from a father*. Comp. Heb. xi. 17.
ancient authorities read *God only begotten*.

³Many very